





# PEERLESS MARTIAL GOD

BOOK 16

*Jing Wu Hen*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Peerless Martial God

(绝世武神)

by

Jing Wu Hen

(净无痕)

# Synopsis

---

Lin Feng tried to be the diligent and hard-working good guy. He studied hard, did his best to make his family proud and not get into trouble, but when he saw a girl being taken advantage of, he had to intervene. He had been tricked, sentenced to 10 years in jail and framed for a crime he never committed, all was lost. If his life was over he would take those who ruined his life with him...

Suddenly he opens his eyes again. He is not dead, but alive in the body of the Lin Feng of a different world. This Lin Feng had been killed as trash of cultivation. This world where the strong had no regard for human life and would kill freely if they had the strength. Called 'trash' and thrown away, with vengeance in his heart he will rise to new heights opposing the will of heaven and earth.

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Alice, Not Sane, Pan Pan @ [Totally Insane Translation](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 1501: Destroy

---

“Watchers!” the crowd in the distance were amazed. The legendary Watchers were there, in front of them! Besides, they looked a lot stronger than in the legends!

According to legends, the Watchers only protected those who had the potential to become emperors, but those ones seemed different.

“The Imperial Assassin Union hadn’t appeared for so many years. Last time it was a bloodbath. Now, they’re here again, so there must be an impending tragedy for Ba Huang.” thought the crowd.

“Why are the Imperial Assassin Union and the Watchers in Ba Huang?” wondered so many people. That was its own mystery. Why did the Imperial Assassin Union want to take over Ba Huang?

At that moment, Emperor Tian Long felt the pressure. The Watchers’ Father had even shown up, which spelled bad news for him. Emperor Tian Long knew that Emperor Yu had prepared for this for a while already. He had brought Tiantai’s disciples to kill his disciples, he had killed his two sons, he had infuriated him to the point where called upon the Imperial Assassin Union.

“Emperor Yu!” Emperor Tian Long looked furious.

“Emperor Tian Long!” said Watchers’ Father hoarsely. Emperor Tian Long raised his head and looked at him.

“Emperor Tian Long, why did you join hands with the Imperial Assassin Union?” asked the Watchers’ Father in a deep voice.

Emperor Tian Long glanced at the members of the Imperial Assassin Union and then looked at the Watchers’ Father, then Emperor Yu and the others again. He was furious and scared. He was at a dead end.

“Watchers’ Father, I also want to ask you a question.” said Emperor Tian Long. “You’re joining hands with Emperor Yu from

Tiantai, who are you actually?”

“It seems like it’s useless to discuss those things, so die!” said the Watchers’ Father hoarsely. In a flash, many of his shadows appeared in the sky, and dazzling arrows filled with cosmic energies descended.

The other Watchers also attacked and shot arrows. There were so many arrows that they blotted out the sky.

“Slash, slash...” many people were transpierced by the arrows. Only the strongest ones could resist, otherwise, they died instantly. In a short time, five-six assassins had died.

Emperor Wen was still in the sky, releasing cosmic energies. He raised his hands and sealed the space. A curtain of energies appeared all around them, of which only emperors could destroy.

The person Emperor Yu was facing stepped back. He feared that the Watchers’ Father could still chase him if he ran. Emperor Yu didn’t chase him, instead he raised his hands and released his force, which was multiplied by one-thousand. That cultivator felt oppressed, like his soul was going to be kicked out of his body.

A yellowish stone crushed the cultivator, reducing them to dust. Even if a Zun cultivator controlled cosmic energies, they couldn’t defeat emperors.

Emperor Tian Long crushed two arrows which were moving towards him. A second later, the Watchers’ Father appeared in front of him.

“Be careful!” shouted someone at Emperor Tian Long, making him shake violently.

The Watchers’ Father didn’t move, as if he was in his natural state, but Emperor Tian Long was shaking and sweating. He’d never had that feeling, the feeling that he was going to die. He looked desperate.

“Boom!” a terrifying strength bombarded Emperor Tian Long’s

body.

“I can’t block that attack!” Emperor Tian Long couldn’t think clearly. He didn’t try to block it, instead he ran away as fast as he could.

“Dong!” Emperor Tian Long’s soul shook violently as if it was going to explode. A hand passed in front of him. If he had been even one second slower, he would have died.

He was already a thousand meters away, but he was soaked in a cold sweat because the Watchers’ Father was relentless.

“He is hiding his real Qi.” thought Emperor Tian Long. The Watchers’ Father’s attacks don’t seem to contain Qi, which means the Qi inside is hidden. If a cultivator closed their eyes, they wouldn’t know that he was there, even an emperor couldn’t.

Besides, that attack aimed at a cultivator’s soul. Emperor Tian Long knew that if that punch had reached him, he would have died, and his soul would have been destroyed.

However, Emperor Tian Long felt like he had managed to escape from death.

The Watchers’ Father didn’t stop though. He continued chasing Emperor Tian Long silently. Emperor Tian Long was scared shitless when he saw that person wearing the plaited bamboo hat appear here-or-there.

“Bzzz!” several silhouettes of the Watchers’ Father appeared all around and condensed strength at the same time.

“Kacha!” at that moment, a metallic sound rang. Emperor Wen’s curtain of energies broke, and a strong cultivator rushed out towards Emperor Tian Long.

“Boom!” Emperor Tian Long was suddenly surrounded by cosmic energies, but he didn’t look scared. On the other hand, he looked pleasantly surprised. He had hope again. He had managed to escape from death once more.



Amongst the other strong cultivators from the Imperial Assassin Union, there was still one left. It was an emperor-level cultivator!

# Chapter 1502: Ferocious, Fierce, Tough

---

After the Watchers' Father saw that Emperor Tian Long was trapped in a cage, he performed some hand seals, and a sharp sword strength appeared. It quickly pierced through the sky.

A dark light pierced through cosmic energies and aimed for Emperor Tian Long's throat. However, at the same time, dazzling lights appeared before Emperor Tian Long and fissures formed.

The Watchers' Father looked furious. That person's empty space cosmic energies were extremely fast, even faster than him.

Lin Feng was observing the battle when suddenly a gigantic hand filled with cosmic energies reached for him. Lin Feng didn't know where that gigantic hand came from.

"Bzzz!" a tornado appeared, and energies surrounded Lin Feng. That gigantic tornado assaulted the energies which surrounded Lin Feng and destroyed them, but as they dispersed, Lin Feng disappeared. He was now between Emperor Wen and Emperor Yu.

"Come here!" shouted Emperor Yu to all the strong cultivators from Tiantai and the Watchers. The strong cultivator who was fighting against the Watchers' Father was a medium-level emperor. He could kill most people in a flash.

But Emperor Wen and Emperor Yu had managed to save Lin Feng. The Watchers' Father stopped chasing Emperor Tian Long, instead he ran towards the one who was fighting against Emperor Yu just a moment before. Millions of silhouettes of the Watchers' Father appeared, nobody knowing which one was the real one.

"Let's go!" Emperor Tian Long and that emperor wrapped themselves up in empty space energies. The medium-level emperor threw himself at Emperor Yu with his fists raised. He wanted to hold out until the other two left.

Emperor Yu raised his hands and mountains fell from the sky.

However, only one punch was destroyed while the other one was still moving forwards. Emperor Wen released terrifying cosmic energies, creating painful whistling sounds. Everything shook under that blow, the scene was apocalyptic.

Emperor Yu released cosmic energies, instantly enveloping everybody with an armor. The attacks reached them and even though they were protected, some of them still coughed up blood.

The Watchers' Father didn't chase. The medium-level emperor's cosmic energies were too terrifying. He couldn't chase him because if he did, he wouldn't be able to protect the group.

"Let's go." said the Watchers' Father. Instantly, everybody started leaving. They hadn't managed to kill everyone.

Some time passed before the Watchers and the others all left.

Tian Long Divine Castle had become a desolate and unpopulated place. All the buildings were wrecked. There were canyons and craters everywhere.

Tian Long Divine Castle had been wiped off the map.

In the distance, many people were aghast. Tian Long Divine Castle had existed for thousands of years and from one day to another, they had disappeared.

Some more time passed, and some people came to see Tian Long Divine Castle's territory. Finally, some people couldn't control themselves anymore. Tian Long Divine Castle had been destroyed but its territory still had many treasures. Tian Long Divine Castle had existed for thousands of years, so they must have an infinite amount of treasures. All those wrecked palaces and castles probably contained priceless treasures.

Those who who had survived didn't prevent people from stealing treasures, the weaker ones had even left.

Lin Feng and the others were already far away, they didn't know what was going on there. The Watchers were still with them.

Because Lin Feng couldn't see their faces, he was wondering if his Watcher was amongst them.

"You're lucky to be the Watchers' Father, it's a great time for Ba Huang, while it's a tragedy for the Imperial Assassin Union." said Emperor Wen, smiling to the Watchers' Father. He looked at the Watchers' Father with admiration. Emperor Wen knew how terrifying the Imperial Assassin Union was, so he was surprised that the Watchers had managed to kill so many assassins at once.

"It's still too early. I know how powerful the Wen Clan is, so I hope that the Wen Clan will collaborate with us seriously in the future. I hope that we'll become a powerful group and that we'll destroy the Imperial Assassin Union. Then, we'll make this world great again." said the Watchers' Father hoarsely. Emperor Wen smiled and nodded, "Master, I will do my best."

The Watchers' Father added, "I hope the Wen Clan can use their full strength and that we can destroy the Imperial Assassin Union thoroughly."

"Are you sure we can?" asked Emperor Wen.

"Stay in Ba Huang and wait for my message." said the Watchers' Father. Then, he gazed into the distance. Under his plaited bamboo hat, his eyes were twinkling.

"Alright, we will wait for your good news." said Emperor Wen smiling. He waved at the Watchers' Father and left.

After Emperor Wen left, Emperor Yu looked at the Watchers' Father and said, "Do you need me to do anything?"

"You can inspect the entire province." said the Watchers' Father. Emperor Yu nodded.

"See you in eastern Ba Huang." said the Watchers' Father before he left with all the other Watchers.

Lin Feng and the others were excited after they heard Emperor Wen, Emperor Yu and the Watchers' Father talking.

“Lin Feng, I’m taking you somewhere special.” said Emperor Yu, glancing at the crowd before adding, “All your fellow disciples have been there, so you should see it too.”

“The limits of the sky?” said Lin Feng. Emperor Yu looked surprised and smiled, “You already know about it?”

“Yes, I do.” said Lin Feng smiling and nodding.

Emperor Yu smiled and nodded, “That’s good, so I don’t need to talk too much nonsense.”

“Teacher, are we going to fight against the Imperial Assassin Union?” asked Lin Feng.

“Yes, they have existed in this world for a long time. Last time, it was a bloodbath. They have only continued to hide because of the Watchers. They tried to kill everyone from the Ba Huang Province and Jiu You last time in the Qi Empire, they failed and now they’re furious. We need to eradicate them before they become any more of a threat.” said Emperor Yu.

“Alright, you should disperse and go to Xuri City in the eastern part of Ba Huang. Don’t draw people’s attention.” said Emperor Yu to everyone. Then he disappeared!

# Chapter 1503: The Holy City's Disciples

---

Xuri City, millions of years ago, used to be the most beautiful city in the eastern part of Ba Huang. In the last thousands of years, the Qi Clan played an important role in Xuri City's success.

Tian Long Divine Castle had been annihilated seven days ago, everybody knew in Ba Huang had heard the news now. Surprisingly, Tian Long Divine Castle was a part of the Imperial Assassin Union, of course, even more astonishing was that Tiantai and the Watchers had joined hands to eradicate Tian Long Divine Castle from Ba Huang.

Emperor Tian Long had lost his sons, his disciples, his territory, everything he had created. Only corpses and wrecked buildings were left of his former headquarters.

In Xuri City, there was a tea house where people drank the best varieties of teas and shared opinions on cultivation. People there were educated and knew a lot about current affairs. At that moment, less than ten people were sitting in a circle, while other people who were outside of the circle didn't dare get close.

Those people in the center had done incredible things, even erudite elders didn't dare disturb those young men.

"The one sitting on the western side is Xia Tian Fan, he defeated many geniuses from Ba Huang. He even defeated Wen Tian Ge in a single attack." whispered someone was pointing at one of the young men.

"Xia Tian Fan is strong, but his cultivation level is not that high. He has only broken through to the seventh Zun Qi layer. You see that one in golden clothes? His name is Zhou Tian Ruo, he's broken through to the ninth Zun Qi layer and he killed a young man from the Feng Clan recently because of something he had said. Then he destroyed the Feng Clan. Even the Qi Clan told him they hoped he could be merciful, but he didn't care." said someone

else to his friend.

Indeed, three days before, people had heard that the Feng Clan, a clan which was neither too strong nor too weak, had been destroyed completely. A young man of the Feng Clan had infuriated Zhou Tian Ruo and Zhou Tian Ruo had annihilated them to the last person. The elders of the Clan had sought Zhou Tian Ruo to get their revenge and the result was just as tragic. Even the Qi Clan couldn't do anything against it.

After that, everybody in Xuri City knew how strong Zhou Tian Ruo was.

“That one there must be Gu Li. He's friends with Zhou Tian Ruo. Zhou Tian Ruo talks to him in a polite way, which means that Zhou Tian Ruo must be weaker than Gu Li.”

“Brother, we've been here for a while, but there isn't a single genius here.” said a young man who had a feather fan and a silk kerchief.

“There are many people who have an undeserved reputation here, but there are some real geniuses. I fought against Kong Ming from the Celestial Thunder Temple and lost.” said Xia Tian Fan calmly. Many people were astonished. Xia Tian Fan and Kong Ming had fought, and Xia Tian Fan lost? Nobody had heard about that! Kong Ming was discreet, so he wasn't like most people who liked to show off.

Xia Tian Fan was very humble too, he wasn't conceited in the slightest.

“Also, Wen Tian Ge and Si Kong Xiao are extraordinary cultivators too.” said Xia Tian Fan looking pensive. Even though he had defeated them, he still admitted they were talented and strong. Besides, he knew he had grown up in a better environment with more cultivation resources, so there was no reason to compare himself with them.

People from Ba Huang Province didn't have access to as many cultivation resources as those young men. Those young men had come to that world to practice cultivation, that's all. They were avid travelers who had been to many small worlds already and would go to many more. They were only interested in seeing how strong people were in the different worlds.

"Jun Mo Xi would be stronger than me if he had the same cultivation level as me." said another young man smiling thinly. It was a young man in blue clothes. He was smiling in a gentle way and looked easy to get along with.

"Jun Mo Xi has the legendary imperial immortal body. The emperor of the palace of the immortals also transmitted knowledge to him, so it's no wonder that he's talented." said the others around nodding.

In the crowd outside the circle, Lin Feng was eavesdropping. He had come to that tea house to see if he'd hear any interesting news before he found out that a meeting was going on.

"Mo Peng from the Bestial Imperial Palace has a great oriental greenfinch roc body." said someone else.

"Bei Yan Yun from the Celestial Walls Manor has broken through to the ninth Zun Qi layer and her force is multiplied by five hundred already. She's also very strong." said Zhou Tian Ruo indifferently. Many people look skeptical. Bei Yan Yun from the Celestial Walls Manor?

Many people didn't know about the Celestial Walls Manor!

Gu Li smiled indifferently. Zhou Tian Ruo talked about Bei Yan Yun but hadn't talk about Lin Feng!

"I heard that the twelve direct disciples of Tiantai are monstrous geniuses, unfortunately, Tiantai has disappeared and its disciples have joined other groups. Otherwise, we would have met them and we could have exchanged views on cultivation with them."



“Indeed, there must be some incredible cultivators from Jiu You that we haven’t seen either. There are also outstanding geniuses from Tiantai. Mu Chen is a cultivator at the very top of the Zun Qi layer. Hou Qing Lin controls reincarnation energy. Tian Chi is an incredible Buddhist cultivator and there’s also Lin Feng, he’s extremely aggressive and famous. I wonder if they deserve their reputation.”

“I think Brother Zhou already knows about that.” said one of the young men looking at Zhou Tian Ruo and smiling in a deep and meaningful way.

“I don’t know what you mean.” said Zhou Tian Ruo looking back at that young man. He was trying to control himself.

“I heard that Brother Gu, you and Lin Feng met in the Celestial Walls Manor. I’ve even heard that you and Lin Feng had a battle.” said that young man calmly.

Everybody stared at Zhou Tian Ruo. Why did he mention Bei Yan Yun but not Lin Feng? Did that mean that Zhou Tian Ruo didn’t consider him a strong cultivator?

# Chapter 1504: To The Qi Clan!

---

Lin Feng was famous in Ba Huang and had a lot of influence. After the events in Fortune City, he had done many incredible things. He had killed Long Teng, Qi Tian Sheng, he had been oppressed by two emperors and was then banished. During the meeting of the emperors, he had killed some of Tian Long's princes, and had killed Qi Qian Ren. He was famous for being a strong demon and a sword cultivator.

Besides, each time he killed people, they were seemingly stronger than him. Lin Feng was a true genius. Such people were rare. Even amongst that group of people, he could be considered strong. Nobody would believe him if Zhou Tian Ruo said Lin Feng wasn't worth mentioning.

Therefore, everybody couldn't wait to hear Zhou Tian Ruo's answer!

"You seem to know a lot." said Zhou Tian Ruo looking at that young man in a cold way. Then he said indifferently, "Lin Feng is not a bad cultivator, we fought, there's nothing exceptional about that."

The nice-looking young man smiled indifferently and said, "If you didn't kill him, it must mean that he's a real genius."

"Zhou Tian Ruo, you have broken through to the ninth Zun Qi layer, and you control golden holy Qi. Yet, you can't compete with a cultivator from Ba Huang. How ridiculous is that?" said a voice in a cold way. The one who was talking was sitting on the southern side. He hadn't said anything so far. But when he heard that Zhou Tian Ruo couldn't defeat a cultivator from Ba Huang, he looked at Zhou Tian Ruo in a disdainful way.

"Qiao Chi Feng, do you think you're so strong?!" said Zhou Tian Ruo.

“I wouldn’t describe myself as a strong cultivator but we’re in Ba Huang. I don’t think that people from Ba Huang who aren’t at the very top of the Zun Qi layer can defeat me here. I haven’t met anyone yet either.” said Qiao Chi Feng in a cold way. What he meant was that he was stronger than Zhou Tian Ruo, at least.

“Brother Qiao is right. The same applies to me.” said another young man smiling thinly. He despised cultivators from Ba Huang.

Many people from Ba Huang who were around looked unhappy after they heard that.

Amongst those young men, there were two kinds of people, those who thought there were geniuses in Ba Huang and those thought nobody in Ba Huang could compete with them. After all, they were geniuses who had grown up in incredibly beneficial environments for practicing cultivation.

“Interesting conversations, brothers!” said someone else. A silhouette appeared in front of them.

“Brother Yu Chen, what is your opinion?” said Qiao Chi Feng, smiling at that young man.

“Brother Qiao, what you say is not unfounded. There are no geniuses in Ba Huang.” said Qi Yu Chen smiling.

“You can’t say that, in the Ba Huang Province there are many geniuses who have special bodies which grant them incredible powers. They will even have the opportunity to leave Ba Huang Province soon. Maybe then they will exceed our expectations.” said the young man who had praised Jun Mo Xi, while glancing at Qiao Chi Feng and Qi Yu Chen.

“Why ruin people’s determination? If Kong Ming and Lin Feng were in front of me, I could kill them in one punch.” said Qiao Chi Feng arrogantly.

When Qiao Chi Feng said that, he glanced at Zhou Tian Ruo in a deep and meaningful way.

Zhou Tian Ruo hadn't defeated Lin Feng in the Celestial Walls Manor, so when Qiao Chi Feng said he'd kill Lin Feng in one punch, it was to infuriate Zhou Tian Ruo. After all, he had no qualms against Lin Feng.

"I am convinced you could!" said Qi Yu Chen calmly.

When Zhou Tian Ruo heard them, he became upset. In that small world, those people were just like him, so how could he admit that he was any weaker than them?

"I could do the same! I could kill Lin Feng in one punch if I used my full strength!" said Zhou Tian Ruo after remaining silent for a few seconds.

In the crowd, Lin Feng was smiling quietly.

Lin Feng turned around, wanting to leave. However, at that moment, someone smiled at him.

"Brother!" Lin Feng was very surprised to see that person. He was just behind him, but Lin Feng hadn't sensed his presence. If they were enemies, he could have killed him instantly.

Of course, enemies couldn't find him easily. Mu Chen had left some memories in Lin Feng's brain to find him no matter the technique.

"Come with me." said Mu Chen, indifferently glancing at the young men from the Holy City. Then, Lin Feng and Mu Chen left.

"Thank you for inviting us, Brother Yu Chen." said Qiao Chi Feng. "If someone could compare their strength with Brother Zhou, that'd be even more interesting."

"I have no objection!" said Qi Yu Chen. The others didn't refuse. But the young men stood up and left. The crowd was disappointed, they wish they could have seen those people fight.

Lin Feng followed Mu Chen and they walked through Xuri City, gathering together with their fellow disciples. That was Emperor

Yu's plan. After destroying Tian Long Divine Castle, Tiantai's disciples had all converged in that ancient city.

At that moment, all the twelve disciples of Tiantai, including Hou Qing Lin and Mu Chen were there.

"Brother, are we going to the Qi Clan?" asked Lin Feng smiling. Why else would they gather in Xuri City?

"Of course. Last time, there was only you, Ruo Xie, and Qing Tian. This is something we should do together." said Mu Chen smiling. Then, he looked at Hou Qing Lin and said, "Qing Lin, bring our fellow disciples to the Qi Clan, you know what to do. I'm going to inform our teacher."

"I understand." said Hou Qing Lin nodding. Everybody looked excited. It was going to be the Qi Clan's turn again!

"Let's go." said Hou Qing Lin. Everybody's silhouette flickered, but they didn't fly, they stayed inconspicuously on the ground.

"What an incredible Qi! Who are those people!" thought many people who were on the main road. A short time before, they had seen a dozen young men who had an incredible Qi and an imposing appearance as well. Now, there was another group. What was going on?

"I think I saw Hou Qing Lin from Tiantai."

"I think I saw Tian Chi the monk!"

"I think I saw Lin Feng!" thought some people. Tiantai's people!

They suddenly thought about Tian Long who had been destroyed by Tiantai.

"I also saw Xia Tian Fan in the air, the one who fought the geniuses from Ba Huang!"

"Are you sure! They're all going to the Qi Clan it seems!" many people were realizing what was going to happen.

"Let's go to the Qi Clan!"

Suddenly, many people followed the group from Tiantai.

# Chapter 1505: Tiantai's Terrifying Army

---

The Qi Clan had existed for many years in Xuri City and was quite famous. Last time, Lin Feng and Ruo Xie had gone there and killed hundreds of Zun cultivators from the Qi Clan. They didn't destroy the Qi Clan entirely, but at least they had caused some damage.

At that moment, in Xuri City, many people were heading towards the Qi Clan. They looked both confident and at ease.

Behind them, there were many people who were following while maintaining a certain distance from Tiantai's disciples. They wanted to watch what happened.

The Qi Clan also knew that Tiantai's people were coming but they didn't do anything, instead they remained particularly calm. Nobody ran towards Tiantai's people. Maybe if Emperor Qi didn't show up, all the Qi Clan's people would die.

The eleven disciples stopped in front of the governmental buildings and calmly stood there without saying anything.

Hou Qing Lin shook his hand and the disciples rose up in the air at the same time.

"We are Tiantai's disciples, we came to pay a visit to the outstanding and heroic disciples of the Qi Clan." yelled Hou Qing Lin, loudly enough that everybody heard him in the surroundings.

From the distance, some silhouettes flickered. Lin Feng looked at the leader of the group and recognized him to be Qi Qian Xing.

Very quickly, those people arrived in front of Hou Qing Lin and the others.

"We've been looking for you." said Qi Qian Xing in a cold way.

"What a coincidence because we're here now. There's no need to continue looking for us, I guess." said Mu Chen as he slowly

descended from the sky.

The twelve disciples of Tiantai were together now.

Mu Chen just smiled indifferently and said, “A year ago, the Qi Clan and some other people came to Tian Jing, but Tiantai had dispersed already so we didn’t have the opportunity to fight. So I decided to bring my fellow disciples here to fight against you now, a battle to the death.”

“How do you want to organize the battles?” asked Qi Qian Xing pensively.

“The emperors can’t participate. You and I are cultivators at the very top of the Zun Qi layer, so if you don’t get involved, I won’t get involved. You can decide whether you want to have one on ones, two on twos, etc. But not matter, they will all be battles to death.” said Mu Chen indifferently and calmly.

“My people can choose whomever they want as an opponent?” asked Qi Qian Xing.

“You’re lucky you’re a cultivator at the very top of the Zun Qi layer, because what you say is ridiculous. I already gave you the chance to choose the rules. What do you want now? Make the strongest cultivators of the Qi Clan fight against the weakest cultivators of Tiantai? If you choose one person, I’ll send Hou Qing Lin or Lin Feng, two people, Lin Feng and Hou Qing Lin together, three people Lin Feng, Hou Qing Lin and Tian Chi, four people, Hou Qing Lin, Lin Feng, Tian Chi and Ruo Xie, and so on.” said Mu Chen. “You know who’s going to fight now, so you choose if you want to fight or not.”

“If I refuse, what then?” said Qi Qian Xing. After he heard Mu Chen, he knew that they had no chance to win. Hou Qing Lin’s strength was enigmatic. Lin Feng was also extremely strong. In the Qi Clan, apart from Qi Qian Xing, nobody could defeat those two. With those rules, the Qi Clan would definitely lose.



“Then, we’ll fight against all the disciples of the Qi Clan.” said Mu Chen calmly.

“You’re in our territory!” said Qi Qian Xing.

“I already invited you to fight, if you refuse, we can only take the initiative to start battling. When you killed people from Tiantai, we didn’t say anything.” said Mu Chen.

“Bastard!” said Emperor Qi at that moment. Then he descended from the sky.

“Why do you insult my disciples? They just came to exchange their views on cultivation.” said Emperor Yu. He also appeared after Emperor Qi showed up.

“Do you think you’re in Tian Long Divine Castle’s territory or what?” asked Emperor Qi in a cold way. The situation was similar to before, but things were less brutal and violent so far. Tiantai didn’t greet Tian Long Divine Castle’s people when they had arrived, they just started killing them immediately.

“You and Emperor Tian Long attacked my small world together, so there’s no difference between the Qi Clan and Tian Long Divine Castle.” said Emperor Yu, who was smiling coldly.

However, Emperor Dong appeared next to Emperor Qi at that moment and looked at Emperor Yu in a cold way.

However, after Emperor Dong appeared, a terrifying strength surrounded his body. He was incredulous and instantly recognized that another extremely strong cultivator was there. He knew who it was, so it was useless to say it.

“Emperor Wen, surprisingly, you dare attack the Qi Clan?” said Emperor Dong. Another emperor had appeared next to Emperor Dong: it was the medium-level emperor from the Si Kong Clan. He was terrifyingly strong.

“Hehe!” Emperor Wen appeared next to Emperor Yu and smiled. However, they were facing two medium-level emperors.

“I’m late!” said someone at that moment. Then an old man appeared in the sky. He looked like an illusion, even to the emperors. When Emperor Dong, Emperor Qi and the others saw him, they were aghast. He wasn’t dead yet?!

“What are you doing here?” said Emperor Dong, still smiling. That was the old emperor from the Celestial Land of Immortals. Surprisingly, Emperor Yu had invited him.

“I heard that Tiantai and the Qi Clan had some tensions, so I came to solve that problem.” said the old man. He was still hiding in the clouds though.

“How do you want to solve the issue?” asked Emperor Dong indifferently.

“I heard that Emperor Qi attacked Tiantai’s small world, and that there are tensions between Tiantai and the Qi Clan, so I thought our younger disciples could also participate and fight.” said the old man smiling. Emperor Dong just groaned coldly.

“So many emperors. Even the old man from the Celestial Palace of the Immortals is here! Tiantai has a lot of influence!” thought the crowd, shivering. Tiantai was gambling. Emperor Tian Long couldn’t appear anymore and Emperor Si Kong was dead, so the Qi Clan’s alliance was losing influence.

“You’re threatening the Qi Clan?” said someone at that moment, it was Emperor Dan.

“What the hell is going on?” people’s hearts were pounding.

“The Qi Clan attacked Emperor Yu’s small world, but Tiantai can’t do the same? Don’t forget that Tiantai only has twelve disciples while the Qi Clan is a clan, they have countless disciples.” said Emperor Deva-Mara appearing.

Emperor Qi’s face gradually changed. How many emperors had Emperor Yu called?

“Emperors can’t get involved in young people’s fights. Emperors

can only fight each other.” said someone at that moment. This time it was the Great Ape Emperor, he was holding a gigantic wooden stick. The Mountain of Flowers and Fruit were supporting Tiantai!

# Chapter 1506: Explosive Attacks

---

The Qi Clan was under a lot of pressure from all those emperors.

“You’re here.” said Emperor Yu, nodding at the old emperor of the Celestial Palace of the Immortals. He then said to everybody, “Back then, Emperor Tian Long and Emperor Qi joined hands to attack my small world. Three powerful groups attacked Tianjing City, so I had to make my people disperse. Everybody already knows about that.”

“We must solve that issue, so I invited some emperors to come. I also invited the old immortal emperor to come to supervise. Today, Tiantai will fight against the Qi Clan.” said Emperor Yu calmly. He looked at the twelve disciples and said, “My disciples are here, and they will fight, whether the Qi Clan accepts or not.” Everybody shivered.

“Old emperor, Great Ape Emperor, the tensions between the Qi Clan and Tiantai have nothing to do with the Celestial Palace of the Immortals and the Mountain of Flowers and Fruit, right? Why come?” said Emperor Dong, ignoring Emperor Yu. They had never fought for or against Tiantai and the Qi Clan, what were they doing there?

“Emperor Yu is my good friend.” said the Great Ape Emperor happily. Emperor Dong was astonished and looked at the old emperor.

“People know that I will die soon, and ever since people learnt about that, the Qi Clan has attacked the Celestial Palace of the Immortals a few times. There’s no need to talk about that, besides, the Qi Clan oppressed Tiantai, that’s a fact. The Qi Clan is not the only group which can attack other people. As far as the tensions between Tiantai and the Qi Clan are concerned, I won’t get involved if the other emperors don’t get involved.” said the old emperor clearly.

“Since it’s that way, I don’t have anything more to say then.” said Emperor Dong. He looked at Lin Feng and the others in a sharp way, “Since you think you can do what you wish in the Qi Clan’s territory, come!”

“So if you don’t reply, it means that you don’t accept and that you want a chaotic battle?” asked Emperor Yu mockingly. “Does the Qi Clan fear my disciples?”

“Empty words.”

A group of people appeared on the Qi Clan’s side. They were young like the cultivators of Tiantai, their Qi was extraordinary, and they looked mysterious.

“It’s them!” thought Lin Feng. There were nine people, those he had just seen in the tea house in Xuri City. They were actually from the Holy City.

“We were just talking about how strong cultivators from Tiantai are. What a coincidence!” said Qi Yu Chen smiling. The young men from the Holy City looked excited, they wanted to fight. They had come to that world to fight, and now they were facing geniuses.

“All those who have nothing to do with Tiantai or the Qi Clan, move aside.” said Mu Chen, glancing at the crowd. What were those people from the Holy City doing there? It would be difficult for Tiantai’s disciples to fight if those people were involved.

“You already determined the rules, I represent the Qi Clan. If my friends want to fight, they can.” said Qi Yu Chen, he knew those people really wanted to fight. They would love to fight against those people from Tiantai.

“I really want to see how strong cultivators from Tiantai are!” said Qiao Chi Feng.

“Mu Chen remained calm and said, “Since it’s that way, let’s fight.”

The nine young men from the Holy City rose up in the air,

readying to fight.

Emperor Dong smiled and said, “Nine people, they can fight against your eleven disciples.” said Emperor Dong. He already excluded Mu Chen because Mu Chen’s strength was unfathomable.

“Wait.” said someone. People turned around and looked at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng took a step forwards, he was looking at Zhou Tian Ruo as he said, “Zhou Tian Ruo, we fought not so long ago, and it was a draw. Then you said you could easily kill me if you used your full strength, is that right?”

Zhou Tian Ruo looked at Lin Feng in a cold way. He was petrified. He had only said that because Qiao Chi Feng thought he was a weakling. He hadn’t thought that Lin Feng would hear him.

Many people who were in the tea house looked excited. Zhou Tian Ruo had been very clear about how easily he could kill Lin Feng.

“Come here and fight!” shouted Lin Feng as he suddenly threw himself at Zhou Tian Ruo.

Fight!

Zhou Tian Ruo couldn’t dodge and he had no excuses.

“Brother Zhou, he’s saying you’re arrogant, so just go and kill him!” said Qiao Chi Feng when he saw that Zhou Tian Ruo was hesitating.

Zhou Tian Ruo released gold holy Qi and it formed into a dazzling armor.

Lin Feng smiled devilishly. Zhou Tian Ruo dazzled at that moment, but he had already lost against Lin Feng, his most powerful attack couldn’t even break Lin Feng’s sword. How could he win now?

Energies rolled in waves in the sky before turning into a sword. It

wasn't dazzling, it looked rather plain.

“Dong!” Lin Feng jumped forwards. The crowd shivered. Even people in the distance could sense how badly that sword smelt like death.

Lin Feng suddenly turned into a shadow and flew forwards.

“Kacha!” the ground crackled. Lin Feng's sword, which looked like a dark mountain, descended from the sky. Very quickly, lights appeared and their attacks collided. Then, the golden lights faded.

“Fissures!” the crowd was amazed because Lin Feng's attack created fissures in the sky.

“Argh!” Zhou Tian Ruo shouted furiously, but he was propelled to the ground with some more rumbling sounds. He was sitting there, on his knees, he was bleeding, his golden body was broken, and Lin Feng was just standing in the air, looking down at him in a despising way.

# Chapter 1507: Can't Withstand a Single Attack!

---

Zhou Tian Ruo crawled on the ground, his body was soaked in his own blood.

“Zhou Tian Ruo and Lin Feng had a draw in the Celestial Walls Manor?” questioned some people.

Everybody had their doubts now because they knew how strong Lin Feng. They had thought that at most, it could be a draw, but apparently, they had underestimated Lin Feng, as Zhou Tian Ruo was crawling before their eyes. Some people looked amused. Was that what he meant by killing Lin Feng in one punch? Zhou Tian Ruo was ridiculous.

Had he used his full strength? Probably not.

“Lin Feng keeps becoming stronger and more aggressive.” thought the crowd.

“I thought you could kill me easily?” Lin Feng was mocking Zhou Tian Ruo in a disdainful way. Zhou Tian Ruo felt humiliated.

Gold holy Qi began rolling in waves again.

“Kaboom!” In a flash, a terrifying strength descended from the sky. The ground crackled and half of Zhou Tian Ruo's body was dug into the ground. At the same time, Lin Feng ran towards him using the same sword attack he had just used.

Lin Feng's strength oppressed him.

Craters formed and the ground shook. Zhou Tian Ruo bled even more.

“Boom!” Zhou Tian Ruo punched the ground with his golden fist and dug into it.

Lin Feng smiled coldly. He descended from the sky, a gigantic



hand fell on Zhou Tian Ruo. Lin Feng was using earth abstruse energy.

“Hmph!” Lin Feng smiled in a cold way and ran forwards. It was as if his legs weighed thousands of kilos on the ground. The landscape changed drastically around him as the ground continued to quake.

As he was falling deeper into the ground, his facial expression suddenly changed.

He continued releasing gold holy Qi, using all the energies he could.

Lin Feng’s sword crashed onto his body and propelled him away one-thousand meters. His golden armor was completely broken, and even more blood spilt. Zhou Tian Ruo’s internal organs were injured, and he was shaking violently.

“Not bad!” thought Lin Feng. An ordinary cultivator of the ninth Zun Qi layer would have died already, but Zhou Tian Ruo’s golden armor was strong. Lin Feng knew that if he saw cosmic energy and an imperial weapon, it’d mean that Zhou Tian Ruo was about to die.

The crowd was awestruck.

Lin Feng jumped forwards and landed in front Zhou Tian Ruo. Zhou Tian Ruo shouted in a cold way, “If you don’t kill me, I’ll kill you!”

Zhou Tian Ruo threw himself at Lin Feng again.

“Boom!” Lin Feng hit Zhou Tian Ruo with his sword and made him fly away again. Zhou Tian Ruo fell down from the sky and hit the ground with another thud.

“Die!” shouted Zhou Tian Ruo. He was going insane as his golden Qi continued rolling in waves and surrounded his body.

“You’re only humiliating yourself.” said Lin Feng when he saw

Zhou Tian Ruo's ferocious facial expression. He turned around and walked towards the group from Tiantai. He completely ignored Zhou Tian Ruo. Lin Feng knew that Zhou Tian Ruo wanted Lin Feng to kill him. Zhou Tian Ruo had a precious treasure with cosmic energies, so if Lin Feng infuriated him, his weapon would release energies. Lin Feng wasn't going to give him such an opportunity though.

Lin Feng's cultivation level was low, but because he understood abstruse energies and force really well, his strength was already incredible.

"In the Ba Huang Province, in a small world, surprisingly, there's a genius like him." thought those young men surprised. If he had grown up in their homeland, he would have been even stronger. Who had taught him how to mix abstruse energies? If he had learnt those things on his own, then he was a real genius.

Lin Feng went back to his friends and glanced at the young men from the Holy City, in particular Qiao Chi Feng and said, "A short time ago, I heard you say that you could easily kill Kong Ming and I. How about we test that?"

The young men from the Holy City were surprised again. After humiliating Zhou Tian Ruo, Lin Feng surprisingly dared challenge Qiao Chi Feng. Qiao Chi Feng had said that indeed, many people had heard him.

Tiantai's people said nothing. The disciples of Tiantai were all monstrously strong cultivators. However, many of them still had a low cultivation level, and they needed to fight to get stronger. Lin Feng was one of them. He relied on his own strength to become stronger.

Concerning Lin Feng, he didn't want to humiliate his opponent, he just wanted to fight against some strong cultivators to become stronger. He had had the strength of the sixth Zun Qi layer for too long in his opinion!

# Chapter 1508: Magnificent Collisions

---

Qiao Chi Feng looked at Lin Feng and walked towards him. He had no reason not to fight against Lin Feng.

At that moment, Qiao Chi Feng didn't look conceited at all anymore.

Lin Feng looked at Qiao Chi Feng, he remained calm and relaxed. Nobody could influence his emotions. He looked unfathomable and enigmatic.

Lin Feng stretched out his hand and condensed demonic and immortal energies. He was preparing for a difficult fight.

When Qiao Chi Feng sensed Lin Feng's energies condensing, he also condensed energies in his fists. His fist became larger, even larger than his own body. His energies were scorching hot and ice-cold at the same time.

"That fist looks scary." thought the crowd. Lin Feng and Qiao Chi Feng's fists were both filled with terrifying energies.

"Die!" Lin Feng moved forwards and raised his right fist which emitted strident whistling sounds and dim lights. There were trails of black energies left behind his fist as he moved ahead.

Qiao Chi Feng condensed energies in his fist and attacked as well. Their fists collided, and white dazzling lights lit up the sky.

However, the ice-cold fist continued moving towards Lin Feng.

A ferocious ice dragon seemed to be forming.

Lin Feng condensed energies in his left fist, and he used his Deadly Demon Punch again.

Lin Feng raised his fist, while Qiao Chi Feng continued running towards him. His fist looked like an ice dragon which wanted to swallow everything. Lin Feng knew that if that fist reached him, he'd die.

“Bzzz!” Lin Feng released wind and empty space energies as he descended from the sky. At the same time, he released sword energy.

Thunderous lights appeared in Lin Feng’s hands as well as demon fire. Then, he released desolate and destructive Qi as well as immortal energy. That sword was demonically terrifying. Explosions sounded, and then an ocean of fire filled the sky.

“Godly Dual Fist Attack!” Qiao Chi Feng looked serious as a spirit condensed behind him.

“Die!” Qiao Chi Feng was chanting a mantra as more spiritual fists appeared.

“That fist attack is extremely powerful, it’s as if a million fists were attacking at the same time.” thought the crowd.

Lin Feng was surrounded by those fists. He had the impression that he was going to die.

“Boom boom!” he released demonic energies and a demon silhouette appeared behind him. He rarely used his demon skills and techniques those days because his abstruse energies allowed him to be a lot more flexible given his cultivation level.

Lin Feng remained calm even though he was facing such terrifying energies. He knew that if he panicked, the consequences would be tragic. His eyes turned pitch-black, and everything became darkness in his brain.

Demonic lights streaked across the sky as Lin Feng ran forwards. If he made even the slightest mistake, he’d be riddled with gaping wounds.

Lin Feng turned into a sharp sword and he condensed Earthen energies in his body too. He tried to condense as many energies as he could at that moment.

“Slash, slash...” Lin Feng destroyed some of the fists, but he didn’t stop.

The sky trembled as Lin Feng continued moving towards Qiao Chi Feng without hesitation, breaking fist after fist. Qiao Chi Feng was stupefied, Lin Feng looked like a madman as he flew forwards.

“Bzzz!” Lin Feng suddenly stopped as his sword descended from the sky towards those fists.

“They have a similar strength.” thought some people.

Suddenly, Lin Feng disappeared and reappeared again in the sky above Qiao Chi Feng.

“Die!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. The soundwaves created by his voice rolled in waves. Then, Qiao Chi Feng raised his head and looked into Lin Feng’s pitch-black eyes. He sensed death abstruse energy quickly surround his body.

“You’ll lose!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. His voice resonated in Qiao Chi Feng’s brain and turned into demon-cursing energies. Qiao Chi Feng thought that his brain was going to explode. He didn’t know how strong Lin Feng really was and he didn’t know that Lin Feng was a demonic cultivator.

Lin Feng was using his full strength as he appeared in the sky above Qiao Chi Feng and his sword descended towards Qiao Chi Feng’s head. The hearts of the young people from the Holy City were pounding. If Lin Feng was strong enough to kill Qiao Chi Feng, then he could kill them too!

# Chapter 1509: The Qi Clan's Situation

---

Qiao Chi Feng's spiritual fists circled around him before turning into a dazzling, singular fist.

“Slash!” Lin Feng's arm turned into a sword and he performed a knifehand strike towards Qiao Chi Feng.

“Piss off!” Qiao Chi Feng jumped forwards and released a myriad of fists again. But while he was condensing them, that sword arrived and dispersed all his energies. Then, Qiao Chi Feng started running away.

That sword was terrifying. After Lin Feng saw that Qiao Chi Feng was trying to escape, he released even more demonic energies. He shook his hand and sword energies moved towards Qiao Chi Feng again.

Qiao Chi Feng couldn't condense energies fast enough. He released another fist, but it exploded, and his blood splashed. Sword lights had pierced through his body, and he was propelled away. He had almost died.

Qiao Chi Feng was soaked in his own blood and a cold sweat. When he saw that he was injured, his face turned deathly pale. He was fixedly staring at Lin Feng in the distance. What kind of energies did Lin Feng use? Each of his attacks were terrifying.

A person's talent had limits, if someone old had known and controlled so many kinds of energies, spells, techniques and skills, it wouldn't have been surprising, but Lin Feng was so young. His sword, demon, cursing, etc. energies were all terrifying!

Lin Feng didn't chase Qiao Chi Feng.

Those people seemed to have extraordinary social status, so they certainly had powerful objects which could protect their lives: Zhou Tian Ruo was an example with his hidden armor. Qiao Chi Feng was stronger than Zhou Tian Ruo so he definitely had

something powerful.

His silhouette flickered and he went back to his friends. Then he said, “Today, the people from the Qi Clan and Tiantai want to fight. If you want to fight against us, we can agree on a date and we will meet again. My fellow disciples and I would be happy too.”

Lin Feng had already defeated two people, but some of the others were probably stronger than Qiao Chi Feng, like Gu Li. His strength was unfathomable. If Tiantai decided to have a group fight against those young men from the Holy City, maybe they’d win, but they’d certainly lose a few people. Lin Feng didn’t want to lose anyone.

“Alright, we will.” said Xia Tian Fan nodding. He was excited and really wanted to fight against Lin Feng, but he respected his choice. He was happy to watch the battles between the Qi Clan and Tiantai too.

“I’m off.” the two young men from the Holy City left. They hadn’t defeated Lin Feng, so they didn’t need to continue losing face by staying there.

“I still don’t want to fight.” said the nice looking young man while smiling.

Gu Li looked at Lin Feng, seemingly amused. At Qi Yan’s wedding ceremony, he had looked at Lin Feng in a disdainful way even though he had defeated a cultivator of the ninth Zun Qi layer. He used to think he could easily defeat Lin Feng, but now he had seen Lin Feng’s real strength and he was surprised.

Very quickly, Lin Feng rose up in the air and looked at Qi Yu Chen. He had brought those people to the Qi Clan, but at that moment, those people weren’t giving him any face as they ran away.

Qi Yu Chen felt uncomfortable. He didn’t want to fight all those people alone. Even if he was confident in his strength, he couldn’t

defeat so many strong cultivators.

Lin Feng looked at Qi Yu Chen and took a step forward. His name was Qi and he had brought people to the Qi Clan. The Qi Clan was a lot larger than Lin Feng had previously thought apparently.

“Forget it!” thought Qi Yu Chen before he moved aside. He didn’t want to get involved. Emperor Dong and Emperor Qi could solve the situation themselves.

Lin Feng smiled indifferently. Then he looked at Qi Qian Xing in a provocative way. Now that those people from the Holy City had left, who could fight?

Emperor Qi and Qi Qian Xing both looked distraught.

“Qi Qian Xing, is the Qi Clan done selecting their fighters? If nobody else wants to fight, I’ll consider that you don’t want to fight and then Tiantai will attack everyone.” said Mu Chen indifferently.

“Emperor Yu, you brought people from Tiantai here, do you want to show everyone how unruly you are?” said Emperor Dan.

Emperor Yu glanced at him and said, “Emperor Qi, Emperor Tian Long and Emperor Si Kong attacked my small world together at the same time without any warning, don’t you think you’re being ridiculous?”

Emperor Dan’s mouth twitched. He didn’t know what to say. All the emperors were there, his face even turned pale. If they were all stronger, they could have dealt with this differently.

“Besides, Emperor Dan, are you trying to humiliate the Qi Clan? We only have twelve disciples.” said Emperor Yu smiling thinly. Emperor Dan was speechless. Tiantai’s twelve disciples could defeat all the disciples of the Qi Clan.

“Mu Chen, give them some time. if they don’t select any fighter, then we’ll go and attack the outstanding and heroic fighters of the Qi Clan. Remember the rules, you can’t kill people who have a



strength inferior to the Tian Qi layer.” said Emperor Yu indifferently. The crowd was aghast. If all the cultivators who had a strength superior to the Tian Qi layer died, then the Qi Clan would have nobody left.

“Old emperor, are you sure you want to get involved?” asked Emperor Dong to the old emperor of the Celestial Palace of the Immortals. If the old emperor of the Celestial Palace of the Immortals didn’t participate, it would change a lot of things.

“If emperors get involved, I’ll fight too.” repeated the old emperor.

# Chapter 1510: Violence

---

The Qi Clan's territory was suddenly invaded by an eerie silence.

Emperor Dong, Emperor Qi and the others all looked at Emperor Yu.

In the distance, the crowd could sense the pressure. They knew that that silence was ominous.

Time passed quickly.

Mu Chen raised his hand and smiled indifferently, "It's time. It seems like the Qi Clan hasn't made a decision yet so we're going to fight against everyone in the Qi Clan."

"Go!" said Mu Chen to Lin Feng and the others. In a flash, they all started running in every direction.

The members of the Qi Clan were not going to sit and wait for death, of course. Everyone started fighting. A gigantic picture scroll appeared and blotted out the sky. A light appeared which surrounded Lin Feng and the other disciples from Tiantai.

Mu Chen followed them and said, "Three people per group. If you see that someone is in danger, help them. Disperse now!"

Everybody dispersed. Lin Feng and Ruo Xie stayed together. Without Mu Chen, there were only eleven disciples in Tiantai so there had to be a group of two. Lin Feng and Ruo Xie were a good team, so they didn't mind being the only group of two.

Lin Feng glanced around and looked at one young man in particular.

"I'll go and kill him!" said Lin Feng. That young man was Qi Zang, someone who was rising. Lin Feng had seen him a year before in a bar.

Qi Zang wasn't ready for Lin Feng to choose him directly. He started running away.

“Curse!” Death energy surrounded Qi Zang, causing his body to turn grey. He was very fast, he crossed thousands of meters in a flash, but Lin Feng was faster.

“Qi Zang!” shouted Qi Qian Xing at that moment.

Qi Qian Xing released empty space energies, but Mu Chen turned around and looked at him in a cold way.

“No...” a horrible shriek pierced Qi Qian Xing’s ears. He couldn’t see Qi Zang anymore. Qi Zang had turned to ashes. Lin Feng was taking Qi Zang’s treasures at that moment.

Lin Feng sensed that Qi Qian Xing was looking at him, so he released sword energies and killed someone else.

“Kill him!” shouted Qi Qian Xing loudly, so that everybody could hear him in the territory of the Qi Clan.

In a flash, the empty space picture scroll dazzled, and a light descended from the sky. Just like last time, Lin Feng was stuck inside.

“Don’t waste time. Even if your picture scroll can constrict me, nobody can kill me in the Qi Clan.” shouted Lin Feng in a disdainful way.

Tiantai’s disciples had already started slaughtering mass amounts of people.

Emperor Qi and the others were furious after they saw that.

“Bzzz!” Lin Feng was imprisoned in the light when suddenly, some Qi rose and surrounded him. Some people apparently wanted to kill Lin Feng.

“What a bad attack, it seems that the Qi Clan doesn’t have any strong cultivators left.” said Lin Feng. He took out his gigantic axe and slashed it forwards.

“Slash!” A silhouette was cut in two and blood gushed. However, more sword lights moved towards Lin Feng.

“Boom boom!” Lin Feng used his axe again, and he rose up in the air as he looked down at the sword lights.

Lin Feng unsheathed his Tian Ji Sword, at the same time, a demon shouted furiously as a demonic shadow appeared behind Lin Feng.

Lin Feng also used his Deadly Demon Punch, condensing energies in both his fists.

“Die, die!” two people immediately died, but there were still more cultivators running towards him.

Lin Feng shook his hand and a mountain fell on them. He also released demon, sword and death energies.

“Boom boom!” At the same time, the terrifying empty space energy was also being bombarded by Tian Chi, Ruo Xie and the others.

Lin Feng eventually was injured, but there were numerous corpses below him.

He touched his wounds and released life energies to heal himself. Tian Chi, Ruo Xie and the others had already broken the empty space and killed the remaining cultivators from the Qi Clan.

“Bzzz!” Lin Feng jumped forwards and, in a flash, someone else died. At the same time, his Tian Ji Sword streaked across the sky and moved towards the depths of the territory of the Qi Clan, continuing to kill people.

Emperor Qi and Qi Qian Xing looked distraught. Even their best cultivators died after facing Tiantai’s disciples. A short time had passed, and there were even more corpses everywhere. It was a bloodbath.

“Father!” shouted Emperor Qi. Emperor Dong looked calm and serene though. Nobody knew what he was thinking.

Emperor Dong glanced around, he was looking for some other

people. The Watchers had to be there too, right? Tiantai had brought the Watchers to Tian Long Divine Castle before.

“Emperor Yu, you don’t want to fuck with me!” said Emperor Dong suddenly. He looked furious this time.

Emperor Dong was talking to Emperor Yu using telepathy, but Emperor Yu just frowned.

# Chapter 1511: The Emperors' Intervention

---

By inviting all the emperors, Emperor Yu's goal was to put the Qi Clan in a dead end, where the Qi Clan couldn't run away anymore.

"Today, you came to kill my people, what else did you prepare for all this?" Emperor Dong was glaring at Emperor Yu. He wanted to know why he looked so calm and serene.

Tiantai's disciples were in the middle of the Qi Clan's territory killing people. Strong cultivators kept falling from the sky. Emperor Dong suddenly turned around and a terrifying empty space energy filled the sky. He suddenly disappeared and reappeared again, five hundred meters away in the air above the Qi Clan's governmental buildings. He glanced at Tiantai's disciples in a sharp way and suddenly, Tiantai's disciples all felt like they were going to suffocate.

Lin Feng realized that he couldn't move anymore. The empty space cosmic strength had created a cage, and had imprisoned him inside.

"Emperor Dong!" A terrifying cosmic energy surrounded Emperor Dong. Emperor Yu and the others were now staring at Emperor Dong.

"Emperor Dong, think carefully before you do anything. If you attack, we'll destroy the Qi Clan completely." said Emperor Yu in a cold way. Emperor Dong seemed like he was going insane as he said, "You either piss off or you'll die here." said Emperor Dong to all the members of Tiantai. Lin Feng had the impression he was going to die, as if a hand had grabbed his throat.

"Alright, we're leaving." said Emperor Yu. Lin Feng and the others were surprised, leaving?

"Are you sure?" asked Emperor Dong, rather surprised.

"Certainly. Let them off and we'll leave." said Emperor Yu.

“Alright, piss off now.” said Emperor Dong. He shook his hands and threw Lin Feng and the others away. Even if he didn’t attack Lin Feng and the others directly, his cosmic energies were still terrifying. He threw them all hundreds of meters away.

“Bzzz!” A silhouette descended from the sky and landed in front of Emperor Dong. He instantly released terrifying cosmic energies and confined Emperor Dong in a cage.

“How does it feel?” asked Emperor Wen’s father. Emperor Wen’s father was also a medium-level emperor. He had already fought against a medium-level emperor during the banquet in the Qi Empire, but back then that medium-level emperor was a member of the Imperial Assassin Union. This time, it was the leader of the Qi Empire, Emperor Dong.

“What are you doing, buddy?” asked Emperor Dong in a calm and serene way.

Emperor Wen’s father smiled in a deep and meaningful way and said, “Emperor Yu, can we attack?”

“Alright.” said Emperor Yu nodding. He raised his hands and two gigantic hands appeared in the sky. He condensed cosmic energies at an incredible speed. Terrifying oceans of cosmic energies appeared in the sky above the Qi Clan’s territory, blotting out the sky.

“What are you doing!” shouted Emperor Dong furiously and loudly.

“From now on, we’ll kill anyone related to the Qi Clan, in Jiu You and Ba Huang!” shouted Emperor Yu furiously. His voice spread far, far away in the surroundings.

That sentence made many people shake violently. Emperor Yu dared say that?

“Boom boom boom!” the ground shook violently as terrifying mountains descended from the sky above the Qi Clan’s territory.

Emperor Dong, Emperor Qi and Qi Qian Xing were petrified. They couldn't believe their eyes. Emperor Yu was attacking them directly?

Meteorites continuously fell from the sky above the territory of the Qi Clan. The territory of the Qi Clan was starting to break apart, and people were getting crushed to mush.

Emperor Yu was forcing the Qi Clan to fight, they had no choice.

Emperor Yu's strength was terrifying. Many people died instantly when he attacked.

"Emperor Yu!" shouted Emperor Qi furiously. The Qi Clan was the most precious thing he had in life. Many of the members of the Qi Clan were even his biological children.

Emperor Qi finally decided to act. He disappeared from where he was standing, using empty space energy, and appeared in front of Emperor Yu. A golden light then aimed for Emperor Yu.

Emperor Yu was already prepared, he shook his hand and condensed stone energy to block the golden light. The golden light lacerated the stone energy and turned into a strong wind. It was becoming more and more terrifying as it shot it forwards.

"Kacha!" Emperor Yu turned to stone himself. Suddenly, Emperor Qi's arms also gradually turned into stone.

But Emperor Qi's golden light turned into a vortex and absorbed everything in its way, breaking apart Emperor Yu's stone armor slowly. However, nobody was worried about Emperor Yu's safety. Many people were flying towards Emperor Qi at full speed, the fastest one being Emperor Wen.

Emperor Wen also controlled empty space abstruse energy. He immediately appeared behind Emperor Qi and punched the air in his direction. He didn't use any special powers, he just used pure cosmic energy to attack because it would have taken too long to condense any other strength.



“Slash!” The stone energies which had surrounded Emperor Qi disappeared and Emperor Wen’s fist crashed onto Emperor Qi’s body, cosmic energies spreading throughout his body.

“Ah...” Emperor Qi gave a horrible shriek. He then released cosmic energy which turned into another vortex. Emperor Wen suddenly moved back as above Emperor Qi, Emperor Deva-Mara appeared and a gigantic demon hand descended.

Fissures appeared in the sky. Emperor Qi’s hair was fluttering in the wind, he was bleeding from his mouth. A moment before, he looked elegant, confident and at ease, but now he looked ferocious, furious and hideous.

“What a pity!” whispered Emperor Wen. Surprisingly, he hadn’t managed to kill Emperor Qi.

“Emperor Yu, are you trying to provoke the whole province of Ba Huang!” said Emperor Dong.

“You still want to hide?” said Emperor Yu smiling coldly. “In the Qi Empire, during the banquet, we were poisoned and the Imperial Assassin Union attacked. Do you think people are stupid, Emperor Dong?”

“My son, Qi Yan, died!” said Emperor Dong coldly.

“That was because a Watcher was hiding amongst the Imperial Assassin Union. Don’t pretend you didn’t know that.” this time, Emperor Yu didn’t say anything, but the Watchers’ Father had.

“You’re falsely accusing people. Besides, maybe you poisoned people! Because you made an alliance with Emperor Yu, you accuse us of having an alliance with the Imperial Assassin Union.” replied Emperor Dong.

“Emperor Dong, you can’t deny it. Tian Long had an alliance with the Imperial Assassin Union, do you need to see Emperor Tian Long for him to tell you that?” said the Watchers’ Father hoarsely.

# Chapter 1512: The Limits of the World

---

Emperor Dong looked at the Watchers' Father, he was wondering who he really was. Did the Watchers' Father really know the truth or was he bluffing?

"Hmph!" the Watchers' Father smirked. Then he said, "Did you think hiding in an empty space battlefield was useful? I don't even need to fight myself." said the Watchers' Father. Emperor Dong looked petrified. The Watchers' Father hadn't fooled him, he knew about it all.

"Boom boom!" the ground broke apart. At the same time, a few people emerged from the ground.

"Emperor Tian Long!" the crowd saw Emperor Tian Long emerge.

"The Watchers' Father is right. Emperor Tian Long is hiding inside the Qi Clan, which means that the Qi Clan are also members of the Imperial Assassin Union."

In the ruins, Emperor Tian Long appeared and a few assassins in black clothes. There were also other emperors, the Six Desires Empress, the Assassin Emperor, the Celestial Thunder Temple's Emperor and the Fairyland of the Nine Songs' Emperor.

"Who invited them? The Watchers' Father or Emperor Yu?" thought the crowd. That battle was no longer about Tiantai and the Qi Clan, it was about Ba Huang and the Imperial Assassin Union.

"Were you waiting for him in the empty space battlefield?" asked Emperor Dong. His voice carried threads of golden energies. He glanced at the four emperors. Emperor Dong had informed Emperor Tian Long who was hiding in the empty space about the situation and told him to leave. However, the ground exploded, and all the strong cultivators appeared.

“Luckily, I was prepared so even if you told him to leave, I’d catch you.” said the Watchers’ Father.

“You must have left something on his body last time when you were in Tian Long Divine Castle.” said Emperor Dong. He was full of doubt. Could the Watchers’ Father gather all the emperors of Ba Huang together like that?

Emperor Tian Long remembered back to his battle against the Watchers’ Father. Had the Watchers’ Father left a memory on his body? How could he have done that silently and intangibly? Wouldn’t he have found out about it by now?

“It’s not important. What’s important now is that I am sure that the Qi Clan and the Si Kong Clan are the leaders of the Imperial Assassin Union. Then, Emperor Tian Long and Emperor Dan decided to join them. Am I right everyone?” asked the Watchers’ Father.

“Emperor Dan, you poisoned everyone. If you hadn’t helped, then emperors wouldn’t have died.” said the Great Ape Emperor extremely loudly.

Emperor Dan’s mouth twitched, but then he controlled himself and said indifferently, “The disciples from the Celestial Land of Alchemists didn’t know that I had participated.”

“We will go to the Celestial Land of Alchemists and make everyone disperse.” said the Assassin Emperor. Emperor Dan shivered and glanced at the Assassin Emperor, but then he sighed.

“The people from the Si Kong Clan didn’t know either.” said the emperor of the Si Kong Clan.

“Hmph!” the old emperor groaned coldly and said, “The Si Kong Clan and the Qi Clan are the same, they’re both core members of the Imperial Assassin Union.”

“Slash...” The emperor from the Si Kong Clan looked at the old emperor using his celestial vision and said, “Do you want to fight?”

“Do you know who the old emperor is?” asked the Watchers’ Father.

The emperor of the Si Kong Clan frowned and said, “Who?”

The crowd was surprised, did the old emperor have another social status?

The Watchers’ Father grinned as he talked to the emperor of the Si Kong Clan using telepathy. The emperor of the Si Kong Clan suddenly looked astonished. He suddenly stopped using his celestial vision, but it was useless. They were not going to let the Si Kong Clan off anyways.

“Old emperor, you’re really going to die.” said the emperor of the Si Kong Clan, smiling in a cold way. Then, he started running away.

“Bzzz!” He used his celestial vision, and the space around him became distorted. A curtain of energies enveloped him and then a vortex. The emperor of the Si Kong Clan ran towards that vortex. The Si Kong Clan would probably become a target now, so he had to leave.

“Slash, slash...” suddenly, a black, fiery vortex appeared and surrounded the emperor of the Si Kong Clan.

“Piss off!” shouted the emperor of the Si Kong Clan using his celestial vision again. The space became distorted again and the flames moved aside. However, two demonic eyes appeared from within the vortex, forcing him back.

The emperor of the Si Kong Clan used his hands to cover his eyes, which felt extremely sore. Then he yelled at the one in the vortex, “Who the hell are you! Come out!”

“Another emperor?” the crowd was awestruck. Who else could be there?

The emperor of the Si Kong Clan was a medium-level emperor, but surprisingly, someone had hurt him.

“Your son was killed at the banquet in the Qi Empire, the watchers killed him if you remember. Don’t you want to avenge him? Why do you want to leave?” asked the Watchers’ Father hoarsely. Those words hurt him deep down. He hadn’t been able to save Emperor Si Kong.

“Brother, are we really leaving?” asked Ruo Xie to Mu Chen.

“We’re in a hurry. Do you not feel like leaving?” asked Mu Chen to Ruo Xie, smiling indifferently. They were still flying in Xuri’s direction though.

The sun was shining upon them, and it felt warm. Lin Feng had the sensation that the sun was getting closer and closer. He knew that he would leave that small world sooner or later, but it was so sudden now.

They were rising higher and higher up, just like the day when Yan Di had emerged from the small world, the energies were beautiful. Lin Feng turned around once. This time, he knew that they were going to leave the small world for real. They were going to go to the real world.

Mu Chen glanced at everyone. Mu Chen’s force was already multiplied by a thousand, so Lin Feng was wondering why Mu Chen still hadn’t broken through to the Huang Qi layer?

Finally, a sunny castle appeared, and it was scorching hot. Mu Chen protected them, Feng Xuan and some of the other weaker cultivators would have died otherwise.

# Chapter 1513: Two Emperors' Fall

---

“Let’s go inside!” said Mu Chen, bringing everyone into the ancient castle.

“Is that sun the path to the Holy City?” thought Lin Feng and the others. There was a statue which looked like a statue of the Messenger! It even looked alive.

“Your Highness The Messenger!” shouted Mu Chen to the statue. His voice echoed against the castle walls.

Suddenly, the statue moved.

Mu Chen was waiting for something to happen.

A short time after, some lights dazzled. The Messenger’s statue became bright as some vitality appeared inside it. After it finished moving, the dazzling lights faded away.

“Your Highness The Messenger!” Mu Chen bowed before the Messenger. They wanted to go to the Holy City, so they had to give him face and act polite.

“What do you want?” asked the statue.

Lin Feng and the others were unhappy by his demeanor. Since they were there, what else could they want?

“Your Highness The Messenger, we came with fate seeds, we want to go to the Holy City. Can you let us pass, please?” asked Mu Chen. He didn’t show how displeased he was.

“I don’t have time today. Another day.” said the Messenger firmly.

“Your Highness The Messenger, we’re in a hurry. Please let us pass.” said Mu Chen calmly.

“I told you to come back another day!” said the Messenger in a cold way. Everybody was astonished, even furious.

“Your Highness The Messenger, you’re the protector of that corridor, you must stay responsible!” said Mu Chen. Then, someone suddenly appeared in front of him. It was the Messenger himself.

The Messenger released a cold Qi.

“I don’t have time today, so piss off!” a strong wind brushed against everybody’s bodies as they were pushed backwards.

A terrifying strength oppressed them, but Mu Chen used force to protect his friends. The Messenger just smiled indifferently and said, “Next time you come, watch your words.”

Then, he went back into the statue of himself and his Qi disappeared.

“No time?” the crowd was astonished. How was that possible? Mu Chen had been very polite until the Messenger refused.

“Brother!” shouted Lin Feng.

“I’m alright.” said Mu Chen to Lin Feng. Mu Chen looked calm and serene again. Then he said to the crowd, “Let’s go back!”

Mu Chen released more force to protect everybody as they left the castle.

The Qi Clan’s territory was already wrecked and there were ruins of buildings and trees everywhere.

Emperor Dong, the emperor of the Si Kong Clan, Emperor Wen’s father and the old emperor of the Celestial Palace of the Immortals had finished their great war and were gone already.

Emperor Qi was the fastest one with his empty space energy, so once Emperor Dong and the others were fighting, he had started escaping.

Emperor Tian Long turned into a dragon. Although he looked strong and powerful, he was already soaked with blood.

“Another emperor is going to fall today.” thought the crowd who

was still in the distance. The Watchers were fighting against the assassins of the Imperial Assassin Union, Emperor Dong and the four others were fighting in an empty space. The other emperors were taking care of Emperor Tian Long and Emperor Dan.

Trying to kill all the emperors at once wasn't the best solution, it was more difficult, and it gave them more chances to escape. So that's why they were focusing on Emperors Tian Long and Dan.

"Emperor Yan, let's go and kill him!" said the Great Ape Emperor to the Taoist monk, Yan Di.

"Call me Yan Di!" shouted Yan Di. The Great Ape Emperor rolled his eyes and said, "Alright, Yan Di, let's attack together. He won't be able to withstand our attacks if we do."

Emperor Tian Long used a mysterious cosmic energy after turning into a dragon which made his defenses even more amazing. He was surrounded by Emperor Wen, the Great Ape Emperor, Yan Di and Emperor Yu. Emperor Wen had sealed the space, so Emperor Tian Long couldn't escape.

At least, the Assassin Emperor, the Six Desires' Emperor, the Celestial Thunder Temple's emperor and the others were fighting against Emperor Dan. Emperor Dan had mysterious attacks, including types of poisoning attacks.

In front of such a powerful army, Emperor Dan and Emperor Tian Long couldn't do much.

"Bzzz!" the Great Ape Emperor started attacking with his gigantic wooden stick.

"Strength, Gigantic Destruction Rod Spell, sky destructive strength!"

Emperor Tian Long raised his head and shouted. Emperor Wen smiled coldly and said, "Emperor Yu!"

"Slash, slash..." the stick turned into very sharp blades which sufficed to make almost anyone suffocate. Emperor Tian Long



started flying away, but the space suddenly shook and energies crashed onto his body, causing blood to splash. Emperor Tian Long gave a horrible shriek and started shaking convulsively.

He was forced back into a human form again. Some more Qi appeared above his head, and he released strength in his hand, but some marks appeared in front of him which turned into a black fire, which easily burnt his hand.

“Destroy!” a finger crashed onto Emperor Tian Long’s third eye. Then, his head started burning.

Cosmic strength moved throughout Emperor Tian Long’s body. The Taoist monk moved backwards, joined his hands together, and said, “You can proud to be killed by me.”

Emperor Tian Long didn’t want to die.

On the other side, the Assassin Emperor’s sword pierced through Emperor Dan’s head and cosmic energies dispersed. The two emperors died at the same time.

“Two more emperors died!” thought the crowd.

Lin Feng and the others came back just as Emperor Tian Long and Emperor Dan died.

# Chapter 1514: A Mysterious Assassin on the Road

---

“How come you’re back?” asked the Assassin Emperor. There was also a disciple from the Abyss of Sufferings in their group.

“The Messenger hit us and made us leave. He said he had no time.” said the Assassin Emperor’s disciple.

“No time?” the Assassin Emperor looked furious. He glanced at Mu Chen and the others as well as Emperor Yu. Many emperors looked at Emperor Yu and the Watchers’ Father. They trusted Emperor Yu even more.

The Si Kong Clan’s territory was wrecked. There were corpses everywhere, on top of that, some people were actively stealing the Si Kong Clan’s treasures.

When they saw the emperor land, they turned frightfully pale and started running away.

“Ba Huang!”

“Boom!” the area around the emperor of the Si Kong Clan suddenly darkened. While he was fighting against the emperors, some people had come and killed the Si Kong Clan’s members. None were left. After Emperor Si Kong died, since he wasn’t there, nobody could protect the Si Kong Clan from such an onslaught.

There were so many corpses on the ground and blood. Even though those people were extremely strong, it hurt more knowing that they had his blood. Those were his grandsons. But now, they were dead.

“I’ll kill you all!” shouted the old emperor of the Si Kong Clan.

“Slash, slash, slash, slash...” the old emperor of the Si Kong Clan killed some people out of anger. Those people dared steal the Si Kong Clan’s treasures, they deserved to die!

Those who weren't dead turned deathly pale and rose up in the air. They wanted to escape but they couldn't. The old emperor of the Si Kong Clan used his Celestial Vision and corpses fell from the sky.

After killing everyone, the old emperor left. His face looked hideous and he was furious. Why had he made all his people go to that small world? Of course, he couldn't know that someone would destroy his clan.

So many things had happened in the Ba Huang Province in such a short amount of time. The Qi Clan and the Si Kong Clan were part of the Imperial Assassin Union.

Besides, Emperor Tian Long and Emperor Dan had joined them later and had died because of it.

The Si Kong Clan was destroyed, all its people were killed. The Celestial Land of Alchemists' emperor was dead, so its disciples dispersed. Many of their alchemy spells ended up in robbers' hands. Some evil cultivators had also kidnapped some of the very beautiful women as well. Because of Emperor Dan, the Celestial Land of Alchemists was wiped off the map.

In the eastern part of Ba Huang, in Xuri City, a young man was walking slowly through a crowd. He looked ordinary except that he had a black cloak on and his eyes were pitch-black.

"So many people came to Ba Huang." thought Lin Feng. He had put on a mask and was surveying the ruins of the Qi Clan. He looked around and saw that there were many young people, but their Qi was incredible. Lin Feng recognized some young people from the Holy City, for example, Zhou Tian Ruo. He was next to a man who was wearing a golden robe.

"Brother, when we go back, I will practice cultivation diligently and break through to the Huang Qi layer." said Zhou Tian Ruo confidently. His brother had heard that he was defeated by a cultivator of the sixth Zun Qi layer, which was a humiliation to

their family. So now, his big brother wanted to teach him a lesson.

“You understand that much, good. You shouldn’t act arrogantly anymore. If you continue, Gu Li will get rid of you. When we go back, you should practice cultivation as you’ve said, and you shouldn’t go abroad again.” said the young man in the golden robe calmly. He knew that Zhou Tian Ruo needed time to break through to the Huang Qi layer. First, he had to reach the very top of the Zun Qi layer, he also needed to control cosmic energies and his force had to be a thousand times stronger.

“Brother, I will practice as hard as I can.” said Zhou Tian Ruo. He seemed to fear his brother.

Zhou Tian Xiao nodded, then his eyes twinkled as he said, “Even though you can only blame yourself for what happened, who defeated you? What’s his name?”

“His name is Lin Feng.” said Zhou Tian Ruo.

“If I have the opportunity, I will help you. Do you want to kill him? Or cripple his cultivation? Or just humiliate him?” asked Zhou Tian Xiao.

“Kill him!” said Zhou Tian Ruo without hesitation. If he didn’t have an imperial weapon, Lin Feng would have killed him. Therefore, he didn’t want to be merciful. He wanted his brother to kill Lin Feng.

Zhou Tian Xiao looked disappointed after he heard Zhou Tian Ruo. He had hoped that Zhou Tian Ruo would tell him he didn’t need any help, he hoped Zhou Tian Ruo would fight against Lin Feng on his own in the future. But of course, even though he was disappointed, he nodded. He would help his brother.

They didn’t try to be discreet, Lin Feng even heard them in the distance.

“He seems strong, but I don’t know how strong he is. Maybe he’s a cultivator at the very top of the Zun Qi layer.” thought Lin Feng.

He slowly turned around and walked towards Xuri City. The Qi Clan wasn't residing in Xuri City anymore, so more people were visiting now.

“We have to wait for Mu Chen's news. I wonder when he'll come to find me.” thought Lin Feng. Since the Messenger had kicked them out, leaving Ba Huang would be difficult. Even with fate seeds, he had refused to let them pass.

Lin Feng was walking slowly, looking pensive. However, at that moment, he sensed energies surround him.

Lin Feng was forced to stop because that strength was a force multiplied by a thousand.

“Who's that?” thought Lin Feng. His eyes turned black as he stared at a cultivator who was at the very top of the Zun Qi layer.

# Chapter 1515: Lin Feng's Strange Experience

---

The energies surrounded him, but he had an empty space robe. Suddenly, he disappeared and reappeared again, one-thousand meters away.

However Lin Feng was surprised because even though he was far away, the energies still surrounded his body. At the same time, the energies were getting closer and closer.

Lin Feng was wondering if it was the first or the second assassin. The strongest assassin he had met so far was the third one, but the first and second would certainly be strong as well.

The energies were getting closer, and then a wind brushed against his body. Lin Feng released wind and empty space abstruse energies to run, at the same time, he released Earth abstruse energy to protect his body.

“Dong!” Lin Feng heard a sound. His heart started racing, as if it was going to jump out of his chest. At the same time, his armor started crackling. His empty space and wind abstruse energies also broke apart.

“Boom!” Lin Feng released demonic Qi this time. He also released force which was multiplied by six-hundred.

“Dong!” The ground shook and Lin Feng felt like he was going to be crushed again.

Many people were watching Lin Feng, they sensed that his Qi was incredible, so what was putting so much pressure on him? They couldn't see it, but Lin Feng was sweating.

“Dong!” Lin Feng's heart was racing, fearful that he was going to be crushed alive.

“Boom!” Lin Feng jumped and released sword Qi. Then, Lin Feng's body progressively turned black. His pitch-black eyes were filled with a deep darkness. When he glanced around, people

would avoid looking at him.

“What an aggressive Qi. Who could attack such a strong cultivator?” thought the crowd.

“Demonic Qi, Emperor Wu Tian Jian’s cultivation type, pitch-black eyes, that’s Lin Feng!” shouted someone suddenly.

“Indeed, that’s Lin Feng!” thought the crowd. Someone wanted to kill Lin Feng.

“You can’t defeat me!” said a voice in Lin Feng’s brain. That person was trying to ruin Lin Feng’s confidence.

“Slash, slash...” sword energies lacerated the space around him. The crowd moved away, fearing they’d get caught up in the fight.

“You’re already dead to me.” said a voice.

Lin Feng’s face became distorted. He released energies, but he couldn’t block the attack. One more step and he might die.

Was he going to die? He didn’t even know who was attacking him. Lin Feng suddenly felt sad and desperate. He hadn’t felt like that for a very long time.

“No, I still have the Jade Emperor’s palace!” thought Lin Feng. He couldn’t give up because he didn’t want to die, he still had so many things to do and he had a wonderful family.

“Piss off, all of you!” shouted Lin Feng furiously glancing around at the crowd. The crowd was surprised, but many of them ran away.

Lin Feng suddenly turned around, jumped forwards, released as much demonic and sword Qi as he could. All the buildings around broke apart.

“Die!” said a cold voice. His face turned deathly pale. Where was the assassin? Behind him?

“Come out!” shouted Lin Feng sounding like a demon.

A gigantic hand condensed in the sky and moved towards Lin Feng. Even if he took out the Jade Emperor's palace, he'd die, he couldn't escape that attack.

“Argh!” demon energies rolled in waves and a demon king appeared behind him.

Lin Feng's demonic determination was changing.

“He's leveling up!” the crowd in the distance was amazed. Lin Feng had just broken through to the seventh Zun Qi layer, in such a perilous situation!

Lin Feng still couldn't resist those energies though. Breaking through to the seventh Zun Qi layer and dying a few minutes later would be even more tragic!

“It's him!” Lin Feng saw Zhou Tian Ruo and his brother in the distance.

“Brother, it's him! Kill him!” said Zhou Tian Xiao suddenly. Zhou Tian Xiao frowned. Lin Feng looked like he was in danger so attacking him was useless. He glanced around but he couldn't see who was attacking Lin Feng.

“Bzzz!” At that moment, someone appeared in the crowd and ran towards Lin Feng. Zhou Tian Xiao fixedly stared at him. Then someone flew in front of Lin Feng, grabbed him, and started leaving.

The crowd was intrigued. Zhou Tian Xiao was dumbstruck, but then he suddenly thought about something and chased them.

A few seconds later, Zhou Tian Xiao was in the sky alone. He hadn't managed to catch up with them.

Zhou Tian Ruo arrived behind and said, “Brother, what's going on?”

Zhou Tian Xiao shook his head, he didn't understand either.

Lin Feng didn't understand either. They made it to a mountain



range before the person put him down.

He smiled wryly and shook his head, “Brother, you scared me to death.”

“I noticed that your cultivation was stuck at the top of the sixth Zun Qi layer, so I had to help you.” The assassin’s energies which Lin Feng had sensed were Mu Chen’s.

“Thank you, brother.” said Lin Feng. He was ultimately happy in the end.

“You don’t need to thank me, you leveled up thanks to your own abilities. I just guided you a little.” said Mu Chen smiling. Some luck and determination had been necessary for Lin Feng to break through to the seventh Zun Qi layer. Mu Chen knew how difficult it was to be stuck at a certain level.

Mu Chen had just tried to help Lin Feng and it had worked. Lin Feng still had a long way to go though.

# Chapter 1516: Violating Rules

---

“Brother, I’m now a cultivator at the top of the Zun Qi layer.” said Lin Feng smiling. He released strength and smiled.

“You want to try and have a fight?” said Mu Chen. Lin Feng was surprised and shrugged, “Don’t bully younger disciples!”

“I’ll control my strength!” said Mu Chen. He wasn’t joking, so Lin Feng wanted to fight now.

“Alright!” said Lin Feng. If Mu Chen wanted to challenge him, why not? Even though Lin Feng was now a cultivator at the top of the Zun Qi layer, he sighed on the inside because Mu Chen was so strong. He was gifted at hiding it too. If Mu Chen wanted to kill Lin Feng without being seen, it would be very easy.

“You can attack me, but don’t control yourself.” said Mu Chen. Lin Feng nodded and released demonic energies immediately.

Lin Feng couldn’t sense Mu Chen’s Qi, it was as if Mu Chen didn’t exist.

Suddenly, Lin Feng jumped forwards and used his Deadly Demon Punch.

Mu Chen raised his fist nonchalantly and his strength turned into a thousand threads of force.

“Break!” said Mu Chen. Lin Feng’s aggressive Deadly Demon Punch dispersed instantly. Lin Feng was incredulous, but he didn’t stop. This time he raised both fists and used Deadly Demon Punches in which he condensed force into.

Mu Chen looked indifferent, he just raised his fists again and blocked them.

Lin Feng released sword energy and slashed ahead of him.

“Slash, slash...” Mu Chen didn’t dodge. His threads of energies destroyed Lin Feng’s attack, but more threads of Lin Feng’s energy

moved towards him. Then, Mu Chen destroyed the remaining energies with his fists.

Mu Chen smiled and raised his hands, collided against Lin Feng's fists. Lin Feng felt that his soul was going to get kicked out of his body. He was shaking violently and was violently propelled backwards.

"Brother, you understand soul strength!" Lin Feng realized. No wonder Mu Chen was an adept at hiding. He knew the intensity of each thread of energy, so he knew how to react.

"Yes, your attacks are quite strong now. You can make them even better though." said Mu Chen.

.....

In the eastern part of Ba Huang, at the limits of the world. The Messenger and Emperor Dong were in the sun castle.

"Your Highness The Messenger, thank you for helping me." said Emperor Dong politely.

"Don't worry, I promised you that I'd do it." said the Messenger nodding.

Emperor Dong smiled and took out a ring, "Your Highness The Messenger, a gift from the Qi Clan."

The Messenger took the ring and said, "Even though I don't involve myself in the small world's affairs, I am in charge of this passage. Nobody can go against my will here."

"Of course." said Emperor Dong smiling. "Your Highness The Messenger, you can change the destiny of this small world."

"Indeed." said the Messenger smiling. He was satisfied with the praise. Emperor Dong then left, "I'm leaving, Your Highness The Messenger."

Emperor Dong then left the castle.

After Emperor Dong left, the Messenger walked to the sun

pattern in the palace and a counterforce rolled in waves.

Lin Feng and Mu Chen were still practicing in the mountain range. Lin Feng was sweating, but he was having a lot of fun. It seemed like the sun was going to fall from the sky, it was scorching hot as hit their backs.

“Eh?” Mu Chen frowned.

The sun was getting nearer and nearer before two gigantic golden word appeared in the sky: THIRTY DAYS!

“How audacious!” thought Mu Chen seemingly furious. The Messenger was stealing the sky and putting up a sham sun. He was violating the rules of the small world!

”Brother, what’s going on?” Lin Feng didn’t understand. What was that? Everybody in the small world could see that.

“Only the Messenger can do that because he controls star date strength. He’s telling us that we have to go to the Holy City within thirty days, otherwise he’s going to close the passage.” said Mu Chen in a cold way.

Lin Feng became upset after hearing this. Last time they wanted to go to the Holy City, but the Messenger had refused. Did he intend to prevent them from going?

Everybody in Ba Huang and Jiu You saw that. In some places where it was initially raining, the rain stopped, and they instead saw those gigantic golden words. Ordinary people were speechless, what kind of strong cultivator was that? How could he write in the sky?

“Bastard!” Emperor Yu was with some disciples, but he stopped and cursed out loud. The disciples were surprised, how come Emperor Yu was so upset?

Emperor Dong also saw that. He was smiling indifferently and thought, “The Messenger has been in charge of the small world for such a long time, he’s becoming even more audacious.”

In the Celestial Walls Manor in Jiu You, the old man raised his head and his facial expression suddenly changed. He frowned as he said, “How audacious! He dares violate the rules.”

Yun Fei Yang and Bei Yan Yun stood next to the old man. Bei Yan Yun asked, “What’s going on, teacher?”

“Someone is violating the rules of this small world!” said the old man. He controlled himself and tried to look calm again. Then he said, “I wanted to help you become stronger at your own pace, but now we can’t because we must hurry!”

The old man rolled up his sleeves and took Yun Fei Yang and Bei Yan Yun away.

# Chapter 1517: Emperor Dong's Revenge

---

Emperor Dong was resting in the Qi Tian Mountain, in Xuri City. He took out a mirror which possessed a terrifying empty space strength.

“Go!” Suddenly, he shook his hand and the mirror shot up into the sky. The ancient mirror diffused ice-cold lights as it fused together with the sky and disappeared.

A light appeared in Emperor Dong's godly awareness, it was Emperor Yu's silhouette. He condensed that silhouette with his godly awareness and made it fuse together with the mirror.

In the distance, Mu Chen and Lin Feng were flying, but suddenly Mu Chen stopped and raised his head. Some lights were shining upon them with a strange type of Qi.

Lin Feng sensed something too and raised his head. However, Mu Chen didn't see anything, and Lin Feng couldn't either. They shook their heads because they didn't know what was going on.

Back in Xuri City, many strong cultivators saw those lights, and they didn't understand either. That mirror was moving too fast. It was moving even faster than some of the strongest cultivators they had ever seen.

In a small abandoned village, Emperor Yu was teaching Xing Zhan some cultivation principles.

“Strength is good, but you need to be faster, otherwise, you'll be in danger if you meet cultivators who are stronger than you.” said Emperor Yu to Xing Zhan. Xing Zhan was a beast, his attacks were explosive and powerful, but he was too slow.

“I understand.” Xing Zhan nodded. Emperor Yu smiled, “You can go have a rest. Tian Chi, come here!”

“Alright!” Tian Chi was seated near them. He smiled and walked to Emperor Yu, but at that moment, Emperor Yu raised his head

and saw some flashing lights.

“Teacher, what’s going on?” asked Tian Chi.

Emperor Yu frowned. He couldn’t see anything, so he just shook his head. However, at that moment, Emperor Dong found Emperor Yu and his disciples.

“Emperor Yu, you’re going to die!” Emperor Dong rose up in the air, pulled his mirror away and streaked across the sky.

Emperor Yu didn’t know what was going on, so he continued teaching his disciples.

Suddenly, Emperor Yu sensed some terrifying energies. His facial expression changed drastically as he shouted furiously, “Go, everybody go!”

“Boom!” The space around them exploded as meteorites fell from the sky. Then, Emperor Yu jumped into a crater with his disciples.

“Boom, boom, boom!” the ground exploded in several different places. Then, Emperor Dong appeared. He immediately punched the air in Emperor Yu’s direction.

“Teacher, go!” after the disciples saw Emperor Dong, they understood why Emperor Yu was panicking. Their faces also turned deathly pale.

“Piss off, all of you!” Emperor Yu jumped forwards and sealed the space. Emperor Yu could only help his disciples escape. He had no other choice.

“Boom!” A terrifying strength oppressed them, causing the ground to crack. Emperor Yu’s stone armor was breaking apart and he was bleeding.

Emperors’ force was multiplied by a thousand. Therefore, for emperors, the Earth and sky were not a problem. However, medium-level emperors controlled cosmic energies even better. Emperor Yu was a low-level emperor and knew he couldn’t

compete with a medium-level emperor. He had to save his disciples before he could worry about protecting himself.

“You will all die, none of you will escape!” said Emperor Dong. With his mirror, he would find and kill those people sooner or later.

“Die!” Emperor Dong released cosmic energies which reached Emperor Yu, making him cough up even more blood.

“Argh!” Emperor Yu shouted and released terrifying Earth energies. Everything around him exploded, and a hole appeared in the air.

“Bzzz!” Emperor Yu used Emperor Dong’s strength to create that hole. He wanted to jump inside, but Emperor Dong smiled coldly. Emperor Yu wanted to escape? Where could he go?

“Destroy!” Emperor Dong jumped, and fissures appeared in the sky. Then he chased Emperor Yu into the empty space.

Ah...” a horrible shriek sounded as Xing Zhan fell to the ground, soaked with blood.

“Xing Zhan!” shouted the others. Their eyes were bloodshot. They were all fixedly staring at that hole. Their teacher and Emperor Dong had jumped inside because he wanted to protect them, but Emperor Yu couldn’t defeat Emperor Dong!

How had Emperor Dong found them?

They all looked desperate.

“What’s going on?” The Great Ape Emperor appeared.

“Emperor Dong came to kill our teacher!” said Tian Chi. His face was deathly pale, and he was terrified.

“Bzzz!” A silhouette appeared and punched the air while jumping into the hole. The Great Ape Emperor and Tiantai’s disciples were incredulous, how fast! That person was completely silent too.

“It’s the Taoist monk!” The Great Ape Emperor could tell that it



was Yan Di. He knew how strong Yan Di was. Besides he had directly jumped into the hole.

“Who’s that?” asked Tian Chi. He couldn’t see the silhouette. He feared that it was one of Emperor Dong’s allies.

“It’s the Fire Mountain’s new emperor, Lin Feng’s friend. He came to help.” said the Great Ape Emperor. “That person has broken through to the Huang Qi layer recently, but his strength is unfathomable, he’s even stronger than me. I hope he’s here to help.”

Tian Chi and the others were still very worried.

“Let’s leave!” said the Great Ape Emperor to the disciples. Emperor Dong was there, so maybe the old emperor of the Si Kong Clan would come and kill them while Emperor Yu was preoccupied.

“No need. Emperor Dong can find us anywhere. I sensed something a short time ago and so did our teacher. Some lights appeared and then disappeared. A short time after, Emperor Dong arrived.” said Tian Chi shaking his head. He understood what was going on. Emperor Dong had used a special treasure to find them.

“All the emperors of Ba Huang are in danger then.” said the Great Ape Emperor. Emperor Dong could find all of them at a moment’s notice.

“Our teacher told us that we had to leave within thirty days after those gigantic golden words appeared in the sky. It seems like we have to join hands to protect each other from Emperor Dong and the old emperor of the Si Kong Clan.”

The Great Ape Emperor nodded, he realized that their problems were multiplying. Did those thirty days have anything to do with Emperor Dong?

# Chapter 1518: Dead End

---

Tian Chi and the others could only sit there and pray. They couldn't fight against a medium-level emperor.

"Mister, can you heal Xing Zhan's leg?" asked Tian Chi. The Great Ape Emperor remained silent for a few minutes. Xing Zhan's leg had been cut by the cosmic energies of a medium-level emperor, so healing his leg would be very difficult.

"It seems like I lost my leg!" said Xing Zhan, trying to smile.

"Xing Zhan!" Tian Chi and Mu Bei didn't know what to say to cheer him up.

"Today, we're still alive thanks to our teacher. A leg doesn't matter. With my strength, even without that leg, I can still practice cultivation and fight." said Xing Zhan smiling. Tian Chi and Mu Bei nodded. They admired him for his courage. They raised their heads and tried to see if their teacher was going to come back safe and sound or not.

After a long time, finally, two silhouettes appeared again.

"Emperor Yu!"

"Teacher!" the disciples ran towards him. The two people were Yan Di and Emperor Yu.

Emperor Yu didn't look fine. He was bleeding, and he looked like he had lost all his strength. His Qi was very weak as if he was going to die.

"I'm alright." said Emperor Yu trying to smile. Tian Chi and the others' eyes were bloodshot, crackling sounds popped they clenched their fists.

"Emperor Dong!" Tian Chi was furious.

"Yan Di saved my life. I would've have died without him." said Emperor Yu smiling. He controlled Earth cosmic energy which

allowed him to increase his defense, but Emperor Dong controlled empty space cosmic energy, which had a slicing characteristic. Emperor Yu couldn't escape either. Yan Di had intervened at a crucial moment.

“Thank you, Master!” said Tian Chi to Yan Di.

“It was a pleasure.” said Yan Di calmly and serenely.

“Teacher!” in the distance, Lin Feng and Mu Chen came back. They pulled a long face.

Emperor Yu smiled at them and said, “We must hurry and inform all the emperors of Ba Huang. Emperor Dong has a precious item which allows him to find us anywhere.”

“Bzzz...” some lights flashed in the sky.

“That's precisely that thing!” said Emperor Yu while looking at the lights which had quickly disappeared again.

“We can't stay in Ba Huang for too long it seems.” said Mu Chen as he gazed into the distance. Emperors were fine, but young people had to be very careful.

Emperor Wen quickly appeared looking distraught, “Emperor Dong has an ancient mirror which allows him to find people.”

“We need to inform all the emperors of Ba Huang.” said Emperor Yu to Emperor Wen. Emperor Wen nodded and said, “I understand. My dad has already starting informing people. Emperor Yu, your injuries...”

Emperor Yu shook his head. He had been injured by cosmic energies, even though his life wasn't in danger, his injuries were very serious. His strength was affected. It would be difficult for him to recover.

“Yan Di!” Lin Feng turned to the Taoist monk. He knew a lot, so maybe he knew what to do.

“I'm not a healer, and I don't understand life cosmic energy

either. I can't heal him." said Yan Di. "Once in the Holy City, you should find a medium-level or a higher-level emperor who understands life cosmic energy. That or a great alchemist or doctor."

Yan Di then turned to Xing Zhan and said, "Your injuries are less serious than Emperor Yu's."

Emperor Yu was a bit disappointed. Emperor Dan was a great alchemist, but he was dead. He had to go to the Holy City to find a stronger cultivator who could help him. But then again, why would those incredible cultivators help him?

"Mister Xiao!" thought Lin Feng. Mister Xiao was mysterious. He had saved Lin Feng's life before and his medicine didn't leave a negative impact on Lin Feng's cultivation, it even helped him become stronger.

"Don't worry about my injuries. We need to come up with a way to leave." said Emperor Yu calmly.

"Is the Messenger the only one who can send people to the Holy City?" asked Lin Feng. The Messenger wasn't very nice, and he was friends with Emperor Dong.

The emperors looked pensive, there were several exits, indeed.

"We can't consider the other one." said the Great Ape Emperor while shaking his head. "In Ba Huang Province, there is only one exit, but in Jiu You, there is another one according to legends. But it's in a forbidden place in Jiu You where even emperors can die."

"Indeed, there's no need to consider Jiu You's exit." said Emperor Wen.

"A high-level emperor can pierce through the barrier of the sky." said Yan Di.

"High-level emperors can break the sky barrier. That's why the strongest cultivators of this world are medium-level emperors, high-level emperors will just leave." thought Lin Feng. So, the

light beam which had emerged from the three lives scriptures had the power of a high-level emperor.

While everybody was thinking. Emperor Wen's father and Emperor Dong were racing against time. Emperor Dong continued using his mirror, he wanted to find Lin Feng, but after he saw that Lin Feng was with Yan Di, Emperor Dong gave up. He didn't know who the Taoist monk was, but he was too strong. His cosmic energies were terrifying, and his holy mark strength was astonishing. Yan Di had attained the highest degree of perfection whilst using holy marks.

After that, he looked for the Six Desires empress. That evil woman had made an alliance with Emperor Yu. He wanted to capture her alive and use her as a sex slave. Not just her, but her disciple, Yi Ren Lei too.

# Chapter 1519: Emperor Wu Tian Jian

---

“Emperor Yu, Emperor Dong hates Tiantai, which is why he looked for you. After you, whom do you think he will hunt for?” asked Emperor Wen.

“Maybe that he will also look for the emperors who joined in the Qi Clan’s destruction.” said Emperor Yu.

“Yi Ren is in danger.” thought Lin Feng. Her teacher had come on the day when the Qi Clan was destroyed. Apart from those few emperors, the Watchers’ Father had come too, the Six Desires Empress, the Assassin Emperor and the others. Emperor Dong would probably choose the Six Desires empress first.

Lin Feng looked at Yan Di and hesitated. If he asked Yan Di to go, they wouldn’t be able to protect themselves against Emperor Dong if he came back.

“Jiange!” suddenly thought Lin Feng. He gazed into the distance and said, “Yan Di, go to the Heavens of Desire’s Palace, everybody else can come with me to Jiange. We’ll be safe there.”

“That sounds good. Yan Di, you’re very strong and very fast. You and Emperor Wen’s father can stay together.” said Emperor Yu.

“Alright. No problem.” said Yan Di. Then, he disappeared.

“What a terrifying speed. He’s even faster than me.” thought Emperor Wen.

“Let’s go to Sword City.” said Lin Feng.

“I also want to see the old man of Jiange.” said Emperor Yu.

Lin Feng and the other strong cultivators landed in Jian Ge. Jiange’s people welcomed him politely. Jian Mu even welcomed them personally. Mu Chen immediately left after that. He wanted to find the other disciples from Tiantai.

Lin Feng didn’t bring people to the Sword Grave though, he went

to the Sword Grave alone.

As soon as the old man saw Lin Feng, he smiled indifferently and said, “I know what’s going on outside. The two sides violated the rules and now such things are happening.”

“Rules?” Lin Feng was surprised. He didn’t understand. Were there rules between the Imperial Assassin Union and the Watchers?

“Master, my teacher wants to see you.” said Lin Feng.

“Tell him to come.” said the old man calmly. Lin Feng went out and called Emperor Yu.

Then, they came back. The old man sighed and said, “You’re like me now, what a pity!”

Emperor Yu bowed politely before the old man and said, “I am not worth mentioning in the same sentence as you, Master.”

“Don’t be that polite. Have a seat.” said the old man. Emperor Yu smiled at Lin Feng, “Lin Feng, please sit down too.”

“Your body has been cleansed, so you are starting to be one with nature. You can’t stay here, you must leave for the Holy City where you will have more opportunities.” said the old man.

Emperor Yu shook his head and said, “Back then, some old friends and I wanted to leave but one of my friends died from the Imperial Assassin Union. It changed both our destinies.”

“Therefore, you need to make sure things end differently.”

“The Imperial Assassin Union is becoming even more audacious, and they have influence. They want to take control over Ba Huang and Jiu You. Therefore, we can only strike back, otherwise, the end results will be tragic. You’ve seen what happened.” said Emperor Yu to the old man.

The old man remained silent for a few seconds and finally nodded: “Indeed, the Messenger has also forgotten what his

responsibilities are. You didn't do anything wrong. Maybe to them, the small world is like a game of chess. You're playing quite well."

Emperor Yu was happy that the old man agreed. Then, he slowly stood up and bowed respectfully, "Thank you for helping us."

"Me?" said the old man smiling wryly, "I'm like you, I'm injured. I was injured by cosmic energies, so I can't fight."

"I'm sure Emperor Wu Tian Jian doesn't know what impossible means. You've existed for five thousand years after all." said Emperor Yu. The old man looked at Emperor Yu in a strange way. Lin Feng's eyes were twinkling.

Was the old man of the Sword Grave Emperor Wu Tian Jian who used to amaze everyone five-thousand years ago? He had become so old that nobody knew him anymore. Indeed, five thousand years before, none of Jiange's current people were born yet.

The old man looked at Lin Feng and stretched out his hands which had scars and blisters left from his sword.

"Lin Feng, and the other disciples from Tiantai are really talented. You can place all your hopes on them." said the old man tapping Lin Feng's shoulder.

Emperor Yu nodded, "Indeed, Master. I am ready to die for them."

"We can die, but they can't. That's why I'm asking for your help." said Emperor Yu bowing. Lin Feng was clenching his fists so hard that his nails pierced through the palms of his hands.

"What makes you act so brave?" sighed the old man. Emperor Yu was an emperor, so cultivation was the most precious thing he had in life. Who was willing to die for other people when cultivation mattered most?

"My fellow disciple who has been there for me for hundreds of years gives me faith." said Emperor Yu smiling in a resplendent



way. He missed his friend.

“Emperor Shi?” thought Lin Feng.

# Chapter 1520: Chessboard

---

Emperor Wu Tian Jian whispered, “I spent my entire life practicing sword cultivation. Even if the members of Jiange think dearly about me, in my life, I’ve never actually had a friend or lover. I’ve always only loved my sword. Do you understand what I mean?”

“I understand.” Emperor Yu nodded. Why would Emperor Wu Tian Jian have compassion for Emperor Yu?

“But you like Lin Feng and I’m injured. If you stay like this, you’ll die sooner or later. You know Lin Feng, you know how he is, if he reaches the clouds, he won’t forget you in the future.”

Emperor Yu continued trying to convince Emperor Wu Tian Jian. The old man smiled and said, “Maybe that little boy is the friend I’ve never had.” said the old man kindly.

Now he was smiling in a resplendent way. Emperor Yu also smiled. They both looked at Lin Feng in a kind and gentle way, as if they had been looking at their own son.

“I’m off, Master, see you around!” said Emperor Yu before leaving. Lin Feng watched him leave. Their conversation had made him think about many, many things, including the mysteries of the small world.

“Master, are there rules between the Imperial Assassin Union and the Watchers?” asked Lin Feng to the old man.

The old man nodded and said, “Very old rules which have been determined for a long time behind the scenes. The Imperial Assassin Union doesn’t only kill people who have the potential to become emperors. Nobody would waste time trying to do that. Their goal is to eliminate some people or block some others. If they want to eliminate someone, they kill them, if they want to block someone, they control them.”

“But some people from influential groups in Ba Huang don’t want to be killed or controlled, so the Watchers help them. During the events in Fortune City, it was decided who the Watchers would protect. Those people are the Imperial Assassin Union’s main targets. They are also the symbols of the Watchers, the Watchers’ Father places high hopes on them. He hopes they’ll create a better future for Ba Huang, or that they’ll leave and comeback, annihilating the Imperial Assassin Union once and for all.”

“So we can’t say that the Qi Clan and the Si Kong Clan control the Imperial Assassin Union.” thought Lin Feng.

“For the people behind the Imperial Assassin Union, the small world is like a chessboard, it provides them with an endless quantity of cultivators. Every hundred years, they choose some. Therefore, the Imperial Assassin Union will always exist because they’re from there!” said the old man calmly.

Lin Feng remembered the banquet in the Qi Empire. Many imperial disciples had appeared and attacked their own teachers, which made sense now.

“My teacher knew something was going to happen, but he didn’t say anything.” Lin Feng knew that his teacher had something to do with the Watchers, maybe the Great Ape Emperor did too, and the old emperor of the Celestial Palace of the Immortals.

“You’re right, he knew but he needed the Imperial Assassin Union act first. They let the Imperial Assassin Union attack so that everybody could have a reason to attack the Imperial Assassin Union.” said the old man.

Lin Feng nodded. For the Watchers, it worked to their benefit. After the wedding ceremony in the Qi Empire, many people had started banding together to fight against the Imperial Assassin Union.

“The Watchers don’t want you to stay in Ba Huang. They want you all to leave the world eventually.” said the old man.

“The Watchers hope we’ll be able to annihilate those who control the Imperial Assassin Union. That way, the safety of the small world will be guaranteed.” said Lin Feng.

However, the old man smiled thinly and shook his head, “No, you’re wrong.”

“I’m wrong?” Lin Feng was very surprised.

“You’re wrong.” said the old man nodding, “New groups keep appearing and disappearing. You underestimate the potential of the people that a small world can create. In the Holy City, many groups of influence fight for small worlds like crazy. In their eyes, small worlds are not worlds, small worlds are treasures. They train geniuses in small worlds.”

“You cannot imagine what the Holy City is like. You should never underestimate a small world, every hundred years, geniuses from here go to the Holy City, and maybe ten people leave each time. But imagine the number of geniuses who emerge in a thousand, ten thousand or even one-hundred-thousand years. Amongst them, then again, imagine the most talented of all those talented people?” said the old man smiling. Lin Feng was pensive.

Some of those people had the potential to become peerless cultivators.

A small world is not only a world where geniuses are chosen, it’s also a nice place to practice cultivation. People like Xia Tian Fan, Zhou Tian Ruo or Gu Li all go to small worlds to practice cultivation.

“Why don’t they send medium-level emperors to this small world to take control of it?” asked Lin Feng.

“Because there isn’t just one group of influence that controls this small world, they have agreements, and there are rules. If you’re strong and destroy everything or act as a horrible ruler, then you just waste the small world’s potential!” explained Emperor Wu

Tian Jian.

This time, Lin Feng remained silent for a very long time before he said, “So our teacher hope that someday, we’ll control this small world!”

Emperor Wu Tian Jian smiled. If they became extremely strong, that small world would be safe. If they controlled that world, then nobody would be able to harm the people in there.

Lin Feng and Emperor Wu Tian Jian didn’t continue talking. Emperor Wu Tian Jian stood up and continued cleaning the Sword Grave. Lin Feng was seated and seemed pensive. He was thinking about what Emperor Yu and Emperor Wu Tian Jian had said.

Each time a battle happened in that small world, it was as if strong cultivators were playing chess!

# Chapter 1521: The Only Option

---

Yan Di and Emperor Wen's father came back and brought a lot of people with them: the Six Desires empress, the Assassin Emperor, the emperor of the Celestial Thunder Temple and their disciples.

Nobody had died.

Jian Mu was serving everybody as they arrived. He had never thought that Jiange would become the place of reunion for all the emperors of Ba Huang. Jian Mu was excited for their newfound popularity. He knew that their Young Master, who had already broken through to the seventh Zun Qi layer, would also break through to the Huang Qi layer soon. Even now, he had brought so many emperors.

Jian Mu didn't know about all the things Lin Feng and the old man had talked about. How would he react if he knew that the old man was their ancestor?

"We can be grateful to Emperor Yan, he's the reason why we're safe and sound." said the Six Desires empress. If Yan Di hadn't come to her, Emperor Dong may have found her and she would have been in danger. Emperor Yu had already been injured by Emperor Dong's cosmic energies and he couldn't heal himself in Ba Huang. He would need to be lucky in the future, otherwise, his strength would be restricted forever, and he would never be able to improve again.

"Indeed, Yan Di helped us so much." said Emperor Wen's father smiling.

"It was my pleasure." said Yan Di.

The Six Desires empress smiled at Lin Feng and said, "You are now a cultivator at the top of the Zun Qi layer, congratulations. You'll soon break through to the Huang Qi layer even!"

"Thank you." said Lin Feng smiling.

“We should determine a strategy to fight against Emperor Dong. If we don’t kill him now, we’ll be stuck together forever. If we disperse, he’ll keep chasing us.” said Emperor Wen who was standing next to his father.

“The Messenger also said that we’d have to send our disciples abroad within thirty days, otherwise, he’d close the passage.” said Emperor Deva-Mara. Everybody looked pensive.

Thirty days would pass quickly, especially now that Emperor Dong has started hunting people.

“Our chances of survival are very low if we see our students off.” said Emperor Yu. People were surprised.

“Some extremely strong people control the Imperial Assassin Union, so we can’t remain enemies with them. If our disciples leave this small world, they won’t be able to escape from those people in the Holy City. The Messenger probably works with them too.”

“So what should we do?” everyone looked at Emperor Yu. They trusted him a lot these days.

“Emperor Yu, you’re a member of the Watchers Union, right?” asked the Assassin Emperor.

“Indeed.” said Emperor Yu, “The Great Ape Emperor is also one of them, the old emperor from the Celestial Palace of the Immortals is the former Watchers’ Father. There are probably some things I don’t understand clearly, but everybody can trust me. The Imperial Assassin Union, since the wedding ceremony, keeps proving what kind of intentions they harbor. They don’t care about the rules, so if we leave, we will end up in the tiger’s mouth.”

“I can prove it. The assassins in the Qi Empire and those cultivators at the top of the Zun Qi layer who controlled cosmic energies weren’t cultivators of the Qi Clan or the Si Kong Clan,

they are probably from behind the scenes. In the past, they didn't get involved in the affairs of this world, but now they do. This shows how badly they want to control Ba Huang and Jiu You, and that even the Messenger is corrupt." said Emperor Wen.

"Emperor Wen, why did those disciples attack their teachers that day?"

"They are controlled by those people who control the Imperial Assassin Union. Some people decide to join one group or the other, so it must have to do with their agreement." said Emperor Wen.

Everybody looked at Emperor Yu. Emperor Yu nodded, "Indeed, initially, there was an agreement of balance, but in practice, there is no equilibrium. If our disciples leave, they will be captured by the Imperial Assassin Union."

"So what can we do?" asked the Assassin Emperor. They weren't surprised that those who control the Imperial Assassin Union would do such things.

"There is a solution." said Emperor Yu.

"We all leave this world!" said Emperor Yu. Everyone had already thought of that, but it seemed drastic.

But the Messenger was corrupt, he would never let them leave.

Emperor Yu knew what everybody was thinking so he said, "Therefore, there's only one solution. Since the Messenger violated the rules of this world, we can force him to open the passage and let us pass. That's the only option. We have no other choice."

"Force the Messenger!" everybody thought that was insane! The Messenger controlled that world, and he had a very particular social status.

"Indeed, that's the only way." thought everybody.

"It's easier said than done though." said Emperor Deva-Mara



while sighing.

“That’s why we need to be altogether. I will try to find a way to make the Messenger, Emperor Dong and the old emperor of the Si Kong Clan come to Sword City. When the time comes, we’ll act at the same time and leave the world.” said Emperor Yu calmly.

The news that all the emperors were in Sword City quickly spread everywhere. At the same time, Emperor Yu shouted and insulted the Messenger repeatedly.

The other emperors did the same, they expressed their discontentment and insulted the Messenger telling him that he didn’t deserve to be The Messenger.

Slowly, people learnt about the existence of a mysterious messenger. They didn’t understand why the emperors insulted him though.

Then, news spread that the emperors of Ba Huang intended to take occupy Sword City and stay there with their disciples. They said they didn’t intend to leave. What was going on? Were the emperors not going to leave Sword City anymore? All of them?

Back at the sun castle, an old man’s facial expression was ice-cold.

“They think I can’t hear them?” said the Messenger. Emperor Dong smiled in a cold way and said, “Maybe they’re trying to infuriate you.”

“What you mean to say is that a cornered beast can do anything?” said the Messenger frowning. He rolled up his sleeves and said, “It’s ridiculous. They’re a bunch of ignorant people. Do they think they can defeat me?”

“They want to bring about their own destruction.” said Emperor Dong smiling in a cold way.

# Chapter 1522: Punishing Thunder Heart Sutra

---

More and more people gathered in Sword City.

Lin Feng and the others were walking in the city center of Sword City. Emperor Yu, Emperor Wen and Yan Di were next to Lin Feng. Because of Emperor Dong, they didn't dare disperse.

In the air, the mirror flashed and illuminated them. Lin Feng immediately stopped.

"He's coming!" they thought. Emperor Dong knew where they were.

Lin Feng and the others continued walking in Sword City as if they didn't suspect anything.

"Lin Feng, Emperor Wen, Emperor Yu. The news is real, the emperors are not leaving Sword City." Lin Feng and the others didn't hide anything.

"They dare walk outside?" thought some people. Emperor Dong was a medium-level emperor, so he could defeat them easily.

"Who's that Taoist? It seems like he's also an emperor." thought some people when they saw Yan Di. He had the demeanor of a transcendent being, and he didn't have the eyes of a Taoist monk.

"You don't understand? That's the new emperor of the Fire Mountain. When he was still a Zun cultivator, he fooled all the emperors. Now, he's broken through to the Huang Qi layer. He even made Emperor Peng struggle the last time they fought." said some people who had heard about Yan Di.

"Boom!" in a flash, a terrifying Qi surface.

However, as soon as that terrifying Qi surrounded them. Yan Di jumped, and lights illuminated the space. Then, they all disappeared.

“Boom!” A terrifying energy crashed where they initially were and Emperor Dong appeared. His attack had failed, so he glanced around.

“You again!” shouted Emperor Dong furiously. That damn Taoist monk was so fast, and he controlled marks to an extreme degree.

“Kaboom!” Thunders sounded in the sky. A silhouette appeared. He wore a white robe and was surrounded by lightning.

“Who’s that?” thought some people.

“The Messenger!” Yan Di, Lin Feng and the others looked at that strong cultivator. That was the Messenger, he was a thunder cultivator!

“I heard that some people were unhappy with the Messenger’s measures!” said the Messenger angrily.

“You’re joking. We would never dare say anything about Your Highness The Messenger!” said Emperor Yu smiling indifferently. Some more people appeared, the old emperor from the Si Kong Clan was even there. Together, there were three medium-level emperors on their side.

“Do you think I’m stupid?” said the Messenger. Thunderous energies surrounded Emperor Yu, making him feel paralyzed.

“You said I didn’t deserve to be a Messenger, you said you hoped I’d die. You said all those things!” terrifying thunder energies continued to surround Emperor Yu.

“I did say that, but you did violate the rules, didn’t you? Since you violated the rules, you’re not doing your job right, am I wrong?” said Emperor Yu. While Emperor Yu and the Messenger were talking, more emperors appeared around him: Emperor Wen’s father, the old emperor of the Celestial Palace of the Immortals.

“Right, as a Messenger, I shouldn’t get involved, but since you all humiliated me and said you wished I would die, I have no choice

but to act.” said the Messenger. He had obviously noticed the emperors surrounding him, but he didn’t care.

Emperor Dong started releasing energies to attack Emperor Wen’s father, while the old emperor of the Si Kong Clan released energies to attack the other old emperor.

“Emperor Yu, Lin Feng, move back.” said Yan Di. Emperor Yu was injured, and Lin Feng was still too weak.

Emperor Yu and Lin Feng moved away. Then the Messenger said, “I’m the Messenger and I possess punishing thunders. Today, I will punish you.”

“Die!” suddenly, purple, thunderous energies lit the sky. Then, lightning ceaselessly fell.

“Kaboom!” The thunders crashed, but Lin Feng was still safe and sound. The Watchers’ Father had appeared in front of Emperor Yu and him.

“Go!” said the Watchers’ Father to Lin Feng and Emperor Yu. The Messenger groaned coldly and chased them. Could they escape?

“Piss off!” said someone else. Then, someone suddenly appeared in front of the Messenger. Terrifying lights surrounded his thunderous energies, and a pitch-black fire started burning. The Messenger had a feeling that he was in danger.

“You must want to die!” shouted the Messenger as he released more thunderous energies. The punishing lightnings crashed onto the lights, and some cracks appeared, but the Taoist monk was still alive.

“You studied the Punishing Thunder Heart Sutra!” said the Taoist monk. The Messenger suddenly looked astonished, “Who are you? How do you know about the Punishing Thunder Heart Sutra?”

In that small world, how could there be someone who knew his

skills?

“There aren’t that many thunder skills, and amongst them, that one is very weak. So, it can only be the Punishing Thunder Heart Sutra!” explained Yan Di mockingly. The Punishing Thunder Heart Sutra was an incredibly powerful skill which had been created by a great emperor, but surprisingly, Yan Di said it was weak!

Actually, the Punishing Thunder Heart Sutra wasn’t that weak, it was just that Yan Di was mocking him.

“What do you understand!” said the Messenger angrily.

“Amongst thunder attacks, you have the Anuttara World Destroying Thunder Sutra, from the Godly Crime Punishing Ancient Scriptures: The Original Brahma Thunder Sutra. And yet you’re telling me that your Punishing Thunder Heart Sutra is good?” said Yan Di mockingly. The Messenger was astonished again, those scriptures Yan Di was talking about were all really, incredibly, astonishingly terrifying!

## Chapter 1523: Arrogant Zhou Tian Xiao

---

“Slash...” the Messenger didn’t say much more. He shook his hand and nine punishing thunders descended from the sky towards Yan Di.

Yan Di shook his hands and terrifying marks appeared in front of him. Both a moon and a sun formed, each containing terrifying energies.

The nine lightnings broke as they crashed onto the patterns, but then they reappeared again one-thousand meters away. The Messenger wasn’t an emperor from Ba Huang, he was a medium-level emperor from the Holy City, so he was a lot stronger than the emperors from Ba Huang. He was in-charge of the passage between the real world and the small world, so technically, apart from high-level emperors, people had to go through him to get to the Holy City.

“Yan Di, go and fight against Emperor Dong. Don’t give him any time!” Yan Di moved away without saying anything, he ran from the Messenger to Emperor Dong.

The Messenger was surprised and then glared at the Watchers’ Father.

“Messenger, you violated the rules!” said the Watchers’ Father hoarsely.

“I control punishing thunders! Who can punish me in this place?” yelled the Messenger.

“You will be punished for violating the rules!” said the Watchers’ Father.

.....

Lin Feng was already far away. The Watchers’ Father had taken him and Emperor Yu very far away. The Six Desires empress and the others were there too.

At that moment, in the distance, two silhouettes appeared. Lin Feng sensed that those people wanted to kill him, so he turned around.

Zhou Tian Ruo and his brother, they were in Sword City too!

“That’s Lin Feng!” said Zhou Tian Xiao who instantly released golden energies.

Lin Feng ignored Zhou Tian Xiao.

“You come out yourself or I’ll come and kill you!” said Zhou Tian Xiao.

Lin Feng frowned and said, “You came to avenge that piece of trash?”

Lin Feng then looked at Zhou Tian Ruo mockingly, “Zhou Tian Ruo, it seems like the word “useless” was created to describe exactly you. You’re such a crappy cultivator that you’ve made your brother handle your own fights.”

Zhou Tian Ruo looked furious. Lin Feng was making fun of him.

Zhou Tian Xiao glared at Lin Feng, and then suddenly started running towards him while releasing golden energies.

“He’s an emperor and he wants to kill a weaker cultivator, how ridiculous!” Emperor Deva-Mara jumped towards Zhou Tian Xiao. Zhou Tian Xiao didn’t hesitate, he continued running while releasing energies. At the same time, he punched the air in Emperor Deva-Mara’s direction.

“Boom!” Emperor Deva-Mara was propelled backwards, his arm even felt sore.

“A bunch of short-sighted people, what do you understand about cultivation?” said Zhou Tian Xiao. He continued running forwards while releasing oppressive energies as if he hadn’t seen the other emperors.

“Go!” even though Emperor Yu was injured, he could still use

cosmic energy. He shouted furiously, and some mountains appeared in the sky, instantly oppressing Zhou Tian Xiao.

Zhou Tian Xiao punched them, and they immediately fell apart. His body even pierced through a mountain. He had a golden aura which made his body seemingly indestructible.

“I’ll teach you about cultivation!” said Zhou Tian Xiao.

“Illusion!” the Six Desires empress jumped forwards and smiled in a seductive way. Zhou Tian Xiao’s facial expression didn’t change at all. He wasn’t affected by her attacks either.

“Dodge!” a gigantic golden hand descended from the sky. The golden holy energy from that attack was way more powerful than Zhou Tian Ruo’s.

Zhou Tian Xiao slapped the Six Desires empress and made her fly away. His energies and determination were impressive. What could Lin Feng do now?

“Pfew...” a gigantic black stick appeared and descended from the sky. Zhou Tian Xiao suddenly turned around and raised his hands. Quickly, his golden hands collided with the wooden stick and Zhou Tian Xiao was propelled away.

“What an army.” thought Zhou Tian Xiao, looking at all the emperors.

“You’re an emperor, do you think killing young cultivators is something you can be proud of?”

“I don’t care about pride, I just want to teach him a lesson. He attacked my little brother, so I can kill him if I want to.” said Zhou Tian Xiao in a cold way.

“Die!” shouted Zhou Tian Xiao. Suddenly, millions of golden holy imprints appeared. The Great Ape Emperor used his Gigantic Destruction Rod Spell again, but the countless golden holy threads of energies pierced through it.



Zhou Tian Xiao shouted furiously, and a holy golden sword shot out of his mouth, piercing through the gigantic stick and heading towards Lin Feng.

“Argh!” the Great Ape Emperor shouted furiously and he himself grew. Zhou Tian Xiao looked a bit scared, but he looked at Lin Feng again and said, “Look at me!”

Terrifying energies penetrated Lin Feng’s brain. Then, Zhou Tian Xiao rose up in the air. The Great Ape Emperor was a strong cultivator, strong enough to stop Zhou Tian Xiao from killing Lin Feng at least.

“If I see you again, I’ll kill you!” said Zhou Tian Xiao. Then, he glanced at the emperors and Lin Feng and said, “You people are weak, in a one-on-one battle, I’ll kill you all!”

Then, Zhou Tian Xiao and Zhou Tian Ruo left.

# Chapter 1524: Emperor Wu Tian Jian's Intervention

---

“That guy is very young and is already a low-level emperor. He’s even stronger than me.” said the Six Desires empress indifferently.

“No need to compare yourself. We are in a small world, so we don’t have access to the most powerful skills. We can only rely on ourselves in this world or cosmic energies. It’s only natural that he is stronger than us.” said Emperor Yu indifferently.

“Indeed, leaving this place will benefit us!” said the Great Ape Emperor as placed his wooden stick on his shoulder.

He gazed into the distance and continued watching those terrifying battles.

At that moment, the Messenger slowly walked forwards while releasing more punishing thunders. The area slowly turned into a type of thunderous world. Then the Messenger said, “This place is my world, I am the punisher here. Fighting against me means fighting against the sky!”

Thunderous lights appeared in his eyes. Those eyes could pierce through the Watchers Father’s body.

“That’s an illusion?” thought the Watchers’ Father. His facial expression suddenly changed.

“Slash...” terrifying sword lights lacerated the thunder world. The Messenger suddenly looked astonished. He sensed how terrifying those sword energies were above his head, and they were becoming even more powerful. He was even suffocating!

“Who’s that!” the Messenger’s face turned pale. He saw an old man in the sky, there was no sword, that person was a sword. The thunderous ocean turned into a sword ocean.

The Messenger’s facial expression changed drastically. He raised

his hands and thunders rolled in waves, but the old man continued walking ahead. The Messenger felt like he was being strangled, that feeling worsened the closer the old man got.

The Messenger wanted to run away, but he couldn't. If he turned around, maybe then that sword would stab him in the back. So, he had to face the old man.

The old man was Emperor Wu Tian Jian. His wrinkles had almost disappeared though. He looked as sharp as a sword, instead of his usual sickly old self.

“You don't rule this world, you're just a doorman!” said Emperor Wu Tian Jian in a sharp way. The Messenger didn't dare look at Emperor Wu Tian Jian's eyes, he feared that they would stab him if he did.

The Messenger looked distraught. You don't rule this world, you're just a doorman?

In the distance, Emperor Dong and the old emperor from the Si Kong Clan saw that someone was oppressing the Messenger. Why? How come there was such a strong cultivator in that small world? What would happen if such a strong cultivator used his full strength? Could he even pierce through the sky?

“Emperor Dong!” said Emperor Wu Tian Jian in a sharp way. Sharp energies surrounded Emperor Dong and imprisoned him.

“You're too greedy. From now on, the Imperial Assassin Union will disappear from Ba Huang.” said Emperor Wu Tian Jian in a calm and serene way, as if he were the leader of that world.

“Besides, give me the item which allows you to track people. I'll decide whether your successor will be eligible to receive it or not!” said Emperor Wu Tian Jian. Emperor Dong was even more furious.

“What? Do you want me to take the initiative and take it?” said Emperor Wu Tian Jian aggressively. Sword energies were whistling as they surrounded Emperor Dong. Even the Messenger

looked weak in front of him. If Emperor Wu Tian Jian wanted to kill them, he could.

“I’ll report that to the elders!” said Emperor Dong shaking. Then he took out the ancient mirror and threw it at Emperor Wu Tian Jian.

Emperor Wu Tian Jian looked at the mirror and put it away. The emperors took in a deep breath of relief.

“Alright. This place needs some peace and tranquility for the next hundred years. We should go!” said Emperor Wu Tian Jian to the Messenger. Then, some people appeared behind Emperor Wu Tian Jian. The emperors were gathering behind him with their disciples. They all wanted to leave that place together.

The Messenger’s life was in Emperor Wu Tian Jian’s hands, so he had to obey. He slowly turned around and walked forwards. Emperor Dong was still oppressed by sword energies, he was suffocating from them even.

Some time passed and they all left Sword City.

“Was that Emperor Wu Tian Jian?” many people had observed the battle and were wondering. They would never forget that battle. Emperor Wu Tian Jian and the Messenger, they had never seen such strong cultivators in their lives.

They still didn’t know that their world was fake though.

Clouds rolled in the sky. The old man from the Celestial Walls Manor was upset when he saw that Qi, “I’m late!”

Then a strong wind started blowing again, and there were two people standing beside him.

At that same time, a group of people arrived at the sun castle. The Messenger put his hand on the sun pattern and it opened itself. It was a door, the door to the Holy City!

# Chapter 1525: The First Battle in the Great World

---

Lin Feng couldn't believe his eyes. What kind of world would the Holy City be?

Lin Feng turned around and glanced at the palace one last time. He didn't know when he would come back because nobody could know what would happen in the great world.

"Go!" said Emperor Wu Tian Jian smiling at Lin Feng in a gentle way. Then Lin Feng nodded.

"Let's go together." those people gradually crossed the gate.

People crossed the gate, one after the other. Lin Feng then followed the crowd ahead. Very quickly, nobody was left in the castle apart from Emperor Wu Tian Jian, Emperor Dong and the Messenger.

After they left, Emperor Wu Tian Jian didn't leave. He looked at the Messenger in a cold way and put his sword on his throat, "You're just the doorman here, so do your job. If you violate the rules again, I guarantee you that I won't let you off."

The Messenger was petrified. His mouth twitched.

After crossing the door, Lin Feng and the others had an incredible sensation. They turned around and they only saw a normal door. That door didn't have incredible empty space energies or anything, but it was probably still significant.

One step and they were in a new world.

They arrived in an ancient castle with a long corridor.

"Are we already in the great world?" thought the crowd. They walked ahead in the corridor rather slowly, as if they were scared to see something happen. Suddenly, everybody stopped.

“Get ready to fight. They don’t care about young people here, so they could kill you.” said Emperor Yu. Everybody nodded and continued walking. They left the corridor and took their first steps outside.

It was very windy, making the crowd feel cold. There was a vast desert at the end of the corridor.

There were two people waiting there, their eyes were closed. After the crowd stepped out, those people’s eyes suddenly opened.

“Those must be the people who determined the thirty-day rule.” thought the crowd.

The Imperial Assassin Union’s rulers didn’t intend to let them off.

“Us emperors can fight while everyone else should escape as far as you can!”

“Boom, boom!” the ground shook and dust rose up in the air. A terrifying cosmic strength cage trapped them and a dragon inside.

The emperors didn’t have time to protect the weaker cultivators. Those people didn’t want to kill them, they only wanted to capture them alive.

In the desert, a terrifying sun pattern appeared. The dragon looked fierce, like it wanted to break the cage.

“Boom!” a silhouette suddenly shot out. He didn’t want to fight, he wanted to run away instead.

“Emperor Deva-Mara!” Lin Feng recognized him.

Wasn’t he as determined as the other emperors? The Imperial Assassin Union’s targets weren’t those emperors, they only wanted the young people. Emperor Deva-Mara wanted Xiao Yu to choose his own path, so nobody blamed him, but some people felt uncomfortable.

“It’s an empty space seal!” shouted Emperor Deva-Mara as he ran

back.

“Yan Di, you’ll have to break the seal!” shouted the Great Ape Emperor. Yan Di’s attacks were terrifying. When he had just broken through to the Huang Qi layer, he had already managed to break Emperor Peng’s defense.

“Alright!” Yan Di nodded and hurried over while releasing black fire energies.

Then, a gigantic Earth-hand grabbed Lin Feng suddenly.

“Piss off!” shouted Emperor Yu as he landed before Lin Feng. Suddenly, the earth hand faded. Then, Lin Feng and Emperor Yu frowned. The Earth-hand turned into a large stone and bombarded Emperor Yu.

Emperor Yu was bleeding after taking that hit.

“Teacher!” Emperor Yu’s body crashed onto Lin Feng.

# Chapter 1526: Mu Chen

---

Lin Feng and Emperor Yu were bombarded by energies, but they were protected by a mountain.

Meteorites fell from the sky. The gigantic stone hand and the terrifying lights falling down made things look apocalyptic.

“Lin Feng, run away!” Emperor Yu pushed Lin Feng away.

“Teacher!” shouted Lin Feng, he was dumbstruck. His teacher couldn’t die...!

The stones didn’t care about Lin Feng’s thoughts. The one who was fighting against Emperor Yu was an Earth cultivator like him, but he was stronger than Emperor Yu.

A gigantic hand softly appeared in front of Emperor Yu.

“Brother...” shouted Lin Feng hoarsely. That was Mu Chen. Maybe that that strength was going to kill Lin Feng’s teacher and Mu Chen. He wasn’t an emperor, so he couldn’t deal with that strength. Even if he were an emperor, he still couldn’t deal with that strength.

“You must want to die!” shouted Mu Chen, his eyes were bloodshot. Suddenly, Mu Chen released energies which turned into millions of hands and moved towards the oppressive energies. Mu Chen himself also turned into a light.

Energies rolled in waves, the enemy was wearing a beautiful Earthen armor, and it was extremely thick. Mu Chen’s hands assaulted him, making him shake down to his soul.

“Die!” said Mu Chen coldly. He continued assaulting the enemy. Lin Feng saw the emperor’s armor crackle.

“How’s that possible?” thought Lin Feng. His heart was pounding. Lin Feng was amazed, astonished, dumbstruck! That emperor from the great world could oppress Emperor Yu, but Mu



Chen was crushing him.

Lin Feng wasn't the only one who was astonished. Many other emperors who were fighting were just as amazed. The first emperor had died, an emperor from the Holy City!

"Buddy, are you okay?" Mu Chen looked at Emperor Yu, he felt guilty. Lin Feng was completely astonished, buddy?

"Emperor Shi!" thought Lin Feng immediately. That mysterious disciple wasn't a cultivator at the very top of the Zun Qi layer! It was Emperor Shi, he had never left Tiantai, he was there the entire time!

"Buddy!" whispered Lin Feng. Then he smiled in a resplendent way. The two cultivators looked like great friends. No wonder Emperor Shi had reacted like that, Emperor Yu had already been injured before.

"He controls soul strength, that's why he can hide himself so well. He could turn into a cultivator at the very top of the Zun Qi layer and hide amongst us. He was protecting us without telling us!" thought Lin Feng. Tiantai's disciples had gone through a lot, but someone had been secretly protecting them the entire time.

"Little bastard, hurry up!" said Lin Feng to Yan Di in the distance.

"Little bastard! Don't you think I'm already trying?" said Yan Di loudly. The sealed area was proving difficult to destroy.

"Lin Feng, Qing Lin, get next to me." said Mu Chen. Then, everybody surrounded Emperor Yu.

A metallic ringing sounded as three silhouettes appeared in front of Mu Chen. One of them had a spear which contained terrifying ghostly Qi. On his left, there was someone with an iron tower, then the one on the right was skinny and controlled terrifying wind energies.

A medium-level emperor and two low-level emperors. Lin Feng

felt like they were suffocating from those pressures.

Lin Feng looked at his fellow disciples and smiled, “We must all live, for Tiantai, for our teachers.”

“For Tiantai!” shouted Hou Qing Lin.

“Slash...” the terrifying spear slashed ahead. It was as if wailing ghosts were throwing themselves at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen shivered, but then turned into a million shadows, which immediately moved towards the enemy.

“Slash, slash...” the long spear turned into a black shadow itself. Quickly, it turned into a hundred spears and attacked the different shadows Mu Chen had created.

The one with the iron tower also jumped, the ground exploding under his feet. He turned into a gigantic stone and created countless stones which surrounded Lin Feng and the other disciples.

The wind cultivator flew towards Emperor Yu. At the same, he released wind cosmic energies which oppressed the disciples from Tiantai. He wanted to capture Tiantai’s disciples while killing Emperor Yu.

“I’ll block him, you go and kill the others!” shouted Mu Chen. Then, an old man in a golden robe jumped forwards and threw himself at the strong cultivator with the spear.

“Slash!” the long spear slashed ahead and pierced the old emperor’s body. Then the attacker smiled evilly.

“Take him!” shouted the old emperor. Mu Chen threw himself at that cultivator.

“Be careful!” shouted the cultivator with the spear. The old emperor had surprisingly grabbed the spear which was stuck in his body.

“Die!” shouted that cultivator. Qi emerged from the spear, but

the old man still held onto the spear.

“Immortal blood!” that cultivator recognized what was happening.

Mu Chen then landed in front of the wind cultivator, and that person’s soul started shaking violently. After that, Mu Chen crushed his body just like he had done just before.

“He’s my teacher and the Watchers’ Father!” whispered Lin Feng. The others looked amazed as well. As many people had already said, anyone could wear a plaited bamboo hat and become a Watcher!

# Chapter 1527: Escape

---

“Soul strength is even more powerful than physical strength.” thought Lin Feng.

The Earth emperor suddenly stopped. His earth cosmic energy turned into stone cosmic energy, making his defense even more terrifying. He didn't fear ordinary medium-level emperors, but he feared Mu Chen and his soul attacks.

“Ah...” at that moment, another horrible shriek sounded.

“Teacher!” Yi Ren Lei looked extremely sad. Her teacher was softly lying on the ground, her face was deathly pale.

A terrifying golden light emerged from her body, her cosmic energies were leaving her body, and she was dying.

“Yi Ren, you have to live on.” said the Six Desires empress smiling. While Mu Chen was killing the two emperors, another enemy who was a medium-level emperor killed the empress. There were more fighters than they had thought.

“Boom!” A terrifying strength destroyed the Six Desires empress' body. Then the medium-level emperor ran towards Mu Chen.

Lin Feng's face turned deathly pale. If Yan Di didn't manage to break that empty space's wall, they would all die.

At that moment, the ground shook, and a terrifying fire appeared. Explosions sounded and the ground quaked. Yan Di had done it!

The medium-level emperor who had killed the Six Desires empress had just landed in front of Mu Chen. He glanced at Yan Di. How could people from that small world break that empty space?

“Si Kong Zhang Ming! Come and fight against them, I will deal with him!” said a strong cultivator to another medium-level emperor. Then, someone else threw themselves at Yan Di. He was

fast enough that he could easily catch up with Yan Di.

“Let’s go! Disperse!” shouted Mu Chen to Lin Feng and the others. His soul even started burning.

“Brother!” shouted people from Tiantai. Even though they now knew Mu Chen was Emperor Shi, they continued calling him “brother” because they were used to it.

Suddenly, several of Mu Chen’s shadows appeared. He grabbed all those who weren’t emperors and left with them in different directions.

“Where are you going!” shouted Si Kong Zhang Ming. Space became distorted as a pair of terrifying eyes loomed overhead, breaking Mu Chen’s illusions apart.

Mu Chen released his godly awareness and controlled millions of threads to attack Si Kong Zhang Ming.

Meanwhile, Lin Feng and Emperor Yu were in the arms of one of Mu Chen’s shadows. “Lin Feng, escape!” said the shadow to Lin Feng. Mu Chen’s illusions could surprisingly speak. The clones who were carrying Emperor Yu and Lin Feng were running so fast that their feet were on fire.

“Brother, you take care too!” said Lin Feng to Mu Chen’s clone.

“Don’t worry. They can’t kill me that easily.” said Mu Chen while smiling.

“I can only take you this far. The area here is very vast, so they won’t find you.” said Mu Chen as he was becoming more illusory. He was too far from his original body, so he was losing strength.

“Teacher!” shouted Lin Feng to Emperor Yu. Emperor Yu was injured, so Lin Feng had to take care of him.

“I’m alright.” said Emperor Yu, even though he looked nervous. Lin Feng knew that Emperor Yu was worried about Mu Chen and the other disciples.

“Teacher, we need to hurry!” said Lin Feng. Even though Mu Chen had brought them quite far, they still weren’t safe. Emperors could still easily catch up with them. Then, they immediately started running.

“Is someone there?” at that moment, Lin Feng sensed some extremely powerful Qi in the distance. Were any of those people emperors?

“Lin Feng, amongst those four people, one of them is an emperor.” said Emperor Yu. Lin Feng felt desperate. Unless those people didn’t harbor ill intentions, Lin Feng and Emperor Yu were going to die. Without Yan Di and Mu Chen, nobody would have been able to escape from the empty space.

“What a bastard!” If the Messenger hadn’t violated the rules, they wouldn’t be in such a terrible situation.

“You think you can escape us!?” yelled the emperor of the group who was chasing them. Surprisingly, an injured emperor had left the small world.

“Let us pass and I’ll give you an incredible treasure, a treasure that you wouldn’t believe could exist.” said Lin Feng. The emperor was surprised and smiled, “What treasure?”

“A great emperor’s imperial scriptures.” said Lin Feng calmly. The emperor was staring at Lin Feng, full of suspicion. Lin Feng had imperial scriptures?

“You can’t kill me as an excuse because it’s in my godly awareness. If you kill me, it’ll be gone. If you don’t believe me, then you can just leave it up to fate.” said Lin Feng.

“Can you prove you have imperial scriptures?”

“The skills I use are part of imperial scriptures. Sense it!” said Lin Feng. Suddenly, his entire body turned black, and he looked like a demon.

“That Qi matches an emperor’s Qi!” the emperor’s eyes looked

even more surprised. Great emperors' scriptures could make any cultivator of the Huang Qi layer go insane.

“Let us go and I'll transmit it to you.” said Lin Feng. The emperor looked pensive though. Would he really transmit that great emperor's ancient scriptures if he let them off?

# Chapter 1528: Conditions

---

The three cultivators who were with the emperor also looked interested. Great emperors' imperial scriptures were priceless items.

“Alright, I accept.” said the emperor smiling happily yet looking at Lin Feng in a deep meaningful way. He still didn't believe that Lin Feng would offer great imperial scriptures that easily. If he did, then he'd have no bargaining chips left, and he'd die.

“You should first prove your sincerity.” said Lin Feng glancing at the three other people indifferently.

“What do you mean?” asked the emperor who was now releasing thunderous energies.

“How can I know that you won't kill me afterwards to make things secret. Use your thunderous energies to kill them. Betray your group and I will trust you, then I'll transmit the imperial scriptures to you.” said Lin Feng in a cold way.

“You must pay the price to obtain something great.”

“He's very smart. Even if I kill them, he won't transmit the imperial scriptures to me.” thought that person. Then he said, “If I kill them, I could also kill you after you transmit the scriptures to me.”

“Therefore, I will first transmit half of it to you, then you will follow us, and you will also protect us along the way. After my teacher is cured, I will teach you the rest. That way, everybody will be safe.” said Lin Feng smiling.

Thunders surrounded around Lin Feng.

“Transmit the great imperial scriptures to me and I'll let you pass, otherwise, I'll kill you on the spot.” demanded that person.

Lin Feng remained calm. He looked indifferent and said, “I don't



have much time. Three seconds. Apart from the great imperial scriptures, I'll also transmit the Dream Of Life Ancient Scriptures to you."

"You must die!" said that person while releasing thunderous energies. A head exploded, but it wasn't Lin Feng's head.

"No..." when the two others saw their friend die, they began to run away. But the emperor was merciless, he used force to surround those two people. Then thunderous cosmic energies moved towards them.

The strong cultivator turned to Lin Feng and said coldly, "Is that enough?"

"If you're not insane, you can never become strong. This place is not safe, so take us away first." said Lin Feng smiling. The emperor wasn't happy to hear that though, so he yelled, "Half of the imperial scriptures!"

"You betrayed your group because of great imperial scriptures. If someone finds us, they'll kill you and we won't be able to escape." shouted Lin Feng. That emperor instantly looked upset. Lin Feng kept fooling around, but he was caught up in his greed now, so he had to cope with Lin Feng.

"That desert is extremely vast. There are even some animal clans and tribes along the way. When we arrive at the nearest tribe, you must give me half of it. If you don't, I'll kill you both without hesitation!" said the emperor coldly.

"Don't worry." said Lin Feng nodding agreeably. Emperor Yu nodded too. Emperor Yu remained calm and serene, he was seated cross-legged in the air and he said nothing. He was happy that Lin Feng was brave but at the same time, he wasn't reassured, that emperor posed a threat to them.

"Take us away now. We're all in danger." said Lin Feng to the emperor. He didn't refuse, he took them away very quickly. He

hoped he would have the opportunity to kill them after having received the whole scriptures, he especially looked forward to killing Lin Feng.

The three of them moved very quickly. Just like the emperor had said, that desert was huge, they flew for a long time without seeing anyone.

Lin Feng looked back to where Mu Chen and everyone else were. But he was too far now, he could only hope the best for them.

Lin Feng had his head turned to the side as they flew forwards because sand kept assaulting his face. It was a bit painful, but Lin Feng remained determined. He was alive, he was becoming stronger, and he had arrived in the great world. He'd have to remember those influential groups for later.

“Lin Feng, it was difficult for you to become strong, it was also difficult to leave the small world, now, you must always be determined, and you must possess an indomitable will. Don't let anything stop you.” said Emperor Yu in a gentle way.

“Don't worry, teacher, I will.” said Lin Feng smiling at his teacher.

“That's good. You're so talented, someday, you'll amaze the great world!” said Emperor Yu to Lin Feng.

“Teacher, you need to remember that advise for yourself! You will be healed soon.” said Lin Feng. He could tell that Emperor Yu didn't sound so optimistic about himself.

“Alright.” Emperor Yu nodded. The emperor's purple eyes twinkled, healed? Those people would die sooner or later!

Lin Feng finally saw some buildings in the desert and some tribal villages. Those villages were as large as Yangzhou City, but the surroundings weren't much to look at. Everything was old and dry.

“What is this place in the great world?” asked Lin Feng to the emperor.

“That desert only exists to connect the small world to the great world!” said the emperor vaguely. He didn’t feel like explaining things to Lin Feng.

“We have access to the small world I come from in the dessert, but do we have access to other small worlds?” asked Lin Feng.

“Indeed. We’re almost in the village now, so remember your promise.” said the emperor. Then, they descended from the sky.

“We still need to get closer. This is only the periphery of the village, so if your friends come, it won’t be safe.” said Lin Feng. The emperor groaned so Lin Feng continued, “We’ll descend when we see the ninth ancient fortress and I’ll transmit half of the imperial scriptures to you then. Then, we’ll continue.”

# Chapter 1529: For Life

---

The emperor stared at Lin Feng but then he continued. They could already see the ninth fortress, so he flew ahead.

Many people raised their heads in the village. Was that an emperor?

“These days, the Celestial Qi Castle has been dispatching a lot of strong cultivators to the desert and they’re fighting a lot. The small worlds must be open.” thought some people on the ground. Immediately after, they lowered their heads again, minding their own business.

That village was a lot larger than Yangzhou City but for strong cultivators, distances weren’t that important. Quickly, the emperor, Lin Feng and Emperor Yu arrived outside of the ninth fortress and landed.

The emperor looked at Lin Feng.

This time, he knew he couldn’t find any other excuse.

“I’ll transmit half of the imperial scriptures to you using my godly awareness.” said Lin Feng. The emperor’s eyes were twinkling with greed.

“Are you ready?” asked Lin Feng.

“Let’s do it.” said the emperor nodding and closing his eyes, but he wasn’t relaxed. He continued observing Lin Feng and Emperor Yu with his godly awareness. If they tried to do anything funny, he’d kill them.

Lin Feng released his godly awareness towards the emperor’s third eye. It contained the demon imperial scriptures.

The cultivator opened his eyes after a short time and inspected his memories. His eyes were filled with greed.

“As expected, great imperial scriptures, very powerful,

unfortunately, I'm not a demon cultivator." said the emperor. Even though Lin Feng had only broken through to the seventh Zun Qi layer, with the demon imperial scriptures, he was probably a lot stronger than ordinary cultivators of the eighth Zun Qi layer. If he knew the imperial scriptures well, he might even fight against cultivators of the ninth Zun Qi layer.

"When will you give me the other half?" asked the emperor. He looked a bit reassured. He almost sounded friendly.

"My teacher has been injured by cosmic energies and I need him to heal. Otherwise, I won't be safe after you get the full deal." said Lin Feng. The emperor smiled and said in a gentle way, "How could I? I would definitely let you go if you gave me the full scriptures."

The emperor was in a great mood. He really thought about letting Lin Feng off. Of course, he just had that thought. He had betrayed his group, so he couldn't let Lin Feng off.

"Master, my teacher is injured, I need you to help me find a solution. After all, you're very strong and we're not familiar with the great world. The sooner you help, the faster you'll get the full scriptures. Thank you, Master." said Lin Feng smiling politely. He even called the emperor Master. Lin Feng had an idea, but nobody knew what it was.

Emperor Yu sighed, he knew that Lin Feng was obstinate and unruly. He was proud because Lin Feng was talented, but he was sad because if he hadn't been injured, he would have been able to protect Lin Feng.

"In this desert, there are many extremely powerful animal clans. They pose a threat to the tribes of the desert. However, those who are from tribe fortresses also grow quickly. Each of these fortresses have a healer. We can try and find one. However, your teacher has been injured by an emperor, so unless we find a healer who is an emperor, he won't be able to recover completely." said the

emperor in a gentle way.

“Why don’t we leave the desert? The great world can’t only be a huge desert!” said Lin Feng. This great world had to have powerful cities.

“My group controls small worlds, and not only yours. All the tribe fortresses here belong to them, so you can’t imagine how powerful they are. Even though I don’t know if other people escaped, like you, this time they really have clear and precise goals that they will follow no matter what. They won’t let any escapee off, but in this tribe fortress, you’re safe.” said the emperor. Lin Feng sighed, what was the Imperial Assassin Union’s goal? Did they have other goals for cleaning the small worlds?

“So, Master, how can we heal my teacher?” asked Lin Feng.

“We need to find a priestess.” said the emperor, “Each fortress has a priestess whose duty is to heal.”

Lin Feng and Emperor Yu followed him while hiding their Qi, looking like ordinary people.

After a short time, they arrived in front of the entrance to a tribe and crossed the door. It was a tribe and it wasn’t a nice place. It was dusty, simple, and nothing was sophisticated. Everybody there were tanned to the color of copper.

Lin Feng was too handsome in comparison. Many people looked at him in a way which made him feel uncomfortable.

Lin Feng’s skin was very white, he looked clean and elegant. In that place, there was nobody like him.

“Don’t show your strength. Be discreet, otherwise some people will inspect your strength and will know about us.” said the emperor hiding his own Qi too. He used telepathy to talk to them. Lin Feng and Emperor Yu nodded and followed.

# Chapter 1530: Dialogue

---

In the center of the territory, there was a tidy row of cottages surrounded by fields of medicinal herbs.

There was a woman wearing a golden and white dress who was sorting herbs.

“Yun, you brought so many herbs again.” said an old man smiling at the woman.

“Grandpa, they contributed a lot. Without them, I wouldn’t have gotten so much.” replied Yun, gesturing towards a young man.

“Hehe, without you, they’d have lost their lives.” said the old man smiling. A strong young man was carrying an animal body on his shoulders behind them. That animal was a few dozens of meters and was seven-eight meters tall. It had golden hair covering its body.

“Rong Qing, you’re really hardworking.” said the old man. The woman smiled and looked Rong Qing who threw the animal body on the ground. “Yun, here it is.”

“Thank you!” replied the young woman politely. Rong Qing looked at her with love in his eyes and said, “If everything’s alright, I’m going.”

“Alright!” said the girl nodding. Rong Qing didn’t want to leave, but he left anyways. After a few steps, he stopped again after seeing three strangers walking towards the girl.

Lin Feng sensed that the young man was looking at him. He inspected him and found that he wasn’t weak, fourth Zun Qi layer even.

“Zun cultivators must be normal in the Holy City.” thought Lin Feng. He noticed many Zun cultivators all around, even cultivators at the top of the Zun Qi layer. He didn’t see any emperors though.

“Who are you?” asked Rong Qing to Lin Feng and the two others.

“We’re looking for Mu Yun.” said Lin Feng. The young woman raised her head and walked towards them.

Rong Qing was fixedly staring at them and prevented them from passing, “What do you want from her?”

“Rong Qing, let them pass!” said the woman. Rong Qing then let them pass, but he followed them.

“What do you want from me?” asked Mu Yun directly.

“Eh?” Lin Feng was surprised. She had an amazing body and she looked gentle. Unlike everybody else in the tribe, she also had very white skin.

“My teacher is injured. We would like you to heal him.” said Lin Feng pointing at Emperor Yu.

“Let me see!” Mu Yun walked to Emperor Yu and put her hand on his shoulder. Then she released some pure celestial Qi.

After she inspected Emperor Yu’s body, she said with surprise, “Your channel vessels are all broken, it’s surprising that you’re still alive or even look normal!”

“My teacher’s body is strong. Can you heal him though?” asked Lin Feng. Emperor Yu was still restraining his cosmic energies. Zun cultivators used their channel vessels to heal, but emperors were beyond strong in that if they still had Qi, they didn’t die.

“Let me try but I’ll need some time. I don’t know if I’ll succeed either, after all, I’ve never had such an injured patient.” said Mu Yun frowning.

“Thank you.” said Lin Feng. At least, they could try. Besides, they could hide there for some time. The desert was vast, and there were many tribes.

“I have some empty cottages, you can stay there and rest in the meantime.” said Mu Yun. Rong Qing was upset, so he said using



telepathy, “Yun, we don’t know who they are. How can you let them stay here?”

“Who would hurt me when he’s this severely injured.” asked Mu Yun shaking her head. Even though Rong Qing wasn’t happy, what could he do?

Lin Feng was nervous, especially when he saw people flying above them in the sky. He was especially worried about his friends.

At night, Lin Feng was seated cross-legged and practicing cultivation calmly. Emperor Yu was in the same room as him. The thunder emperor was next door, but he couldn’t sleep because he kept thinking about the great emperor’s imperial scriptures. He was worried that Lin Feng could escape as well.

But after a few days, he felt more relaxed. Lin Feng and Emperor Yu stayed there and nobody came to look for them.

Mu Yun wasn’t an empress but she was a great healer. She knew some amazing techniques. She concocted some medicine and Emperor Yu’s channel vessels slowly healed. She couldn’t heal his cosmic energies though.

“Lin Feng, Emperor Yu recovered a lot. Will you transmit the great emperor’s ancient scriptures to me now?” asked the thunder emperor in a courtyard.

“Not yet.” said Lin Feng shaking his head.

“How long do I still have to wait!” asked the thunder emperor in a cold way.

“I will tell you when the right time comes, of course! Otherwise, you can just kill me.” said Lin Feng in a cold way. Then, he walked back to his cottage.

“You...” the emperor was furious, but he decided to wait. He waited for Lin Feng to leave before whispering, “Once you transmit the scriptures to me, you’ll die!”

Lin Feng continued practicing cultivation day and night. Emperor Yu could only watch as Lin Feng practiced cultivation. Sometimes, he saw Lin Feng's painful facial expressions and sighed. He didn't know what Lin Feng was studying but it looked painful. Besides, he was practicing cultivation everyday without break.

---

Lin Feng had already been in that world for seven days now. Back in a gigantic city in the desert, there was a gigantic castle which looked like a shrine. The flight of stairs which lead to the entrance was astonishingly lofty.

At that moment, in that castle, a middle-aged man in golden clothes was punching an ancient wooden table furiously. The ground shook each time he threw a punch.

Emperor Dong was there too.

“How many days!” said someone in a weak voice.

“Seven days!” said a strong cultivator respectfully. That strong cultivator was the one who had fought against Mu Chen: the medium-level emperor.

“Seven days, where are the people I want?”

Everybody lowered their heads. They didn't dare talk.

“Seal the passages, if you see anyone, capture them!” said that person furiously. “Besides, I will send people to inspect the desert, every single castle in the desert!”

# Chapter 1531: Small World's People

---

“Inspect everything!” yelled the middle-aged man, hammering on the table with his fists. “So many people escaped from you, I don’t understand how you could let this happen!”

Those around him were covered in a cold sweat. Emperor Dong looked terrified, he didn’t dare raise his head.

At that moment, the middle-aged man slowly stood up, making the crowd around him feel extremely nervous.

“Emperor Dong!” shouted the middle-aged man. Emperor Dong was shaking, but he replied, “Present!”

“You’re lucky that you have my blood. Even though we sent you to a small world because you couldn’t rely on your own abilities to break through to the Huang Qi layer, we still spent a lot of resources raising you.” said the middle-aged man. Emperor Dong almost collapsed. He knew how bad tempered that middle-aged man was.

“I am fully devoted!” said Emperor Dong shaking.

“Since that sword emperor doesn’t want to let us restrain the small world, go to the small world and tell everyone that the world they live in is just a small world controlled by stronger cultivators. Also, tell the Messenger to relax the restrictions to come out. Let nature take its course.” said the middle-aged man calmly. Emperor Dong’s heart was pounding violently. He could only imagine how many people would want to leave that world if he told them that their world was fake. Many of them would want to come to the great world and the situation would be chaotic and apocalyptic.

“Relax the restrictions to come out!” Emperor Dong didn’t really understand, but he didn’t dare ask. In the future, the strong cultivators from Ba Huang and Jiu You would want to live in the great world, including those who already came.

A day later, Emperor Dong went back to Ba Huang. Emperor Qi and him started telling everyone that they lived in a small world and that the Holy City was the real world. Many people were astonished.

Xue Bi Yao was in the Celestial Land of Alchemists when she heard the news, “So this is a small world!”

In the western part of Ba Huang, two beautiful girls looked at the sky and the clouds, “All of this is fake?”

In the brutal part of Ba Huang, in the Bestial Imperial Palace, a great oriental greenfinch roc attacked a mountain in rage before he flew up towards the sky, emitting sonic booms behind him. He looked ferocious as he said, “I’m a great oriental greenfinch roc, so I must leave Ba Huang and go to the great world. The sky can’t stop me. Diviner, you weren’t exactly right!”

Many geniuses looked in the direction of Eastern Ba Huang. It was said that the end of the world was there, that the passage to go to the great world was there!

.....

Lin Feng was sitting outside looking at a tree. He looked calm and serene, he wasn’t releasing any Qi.

“Lin Feng, you’re still here? How’s your teacher?” asked an old man smiling.

“He’s much better, Papa Bai.” said Lin Feng smiling.

“Haha, Yun is the goddess of our tribe. No man has ever managed to seduce her, but you should try!” said Papa Bai smiling, he was in a good mood. “But let me tell you, Yun wants a young man who is at least a cultivator at the top of the Zun Qi layer, so good luck!”

“No hope!” said Lin Feng smiling in a gentle way and shrugging, making Papa Bai laugh.

“Papa Bai, you’re talking about me in a bad way!” said Mu Yun.

Lin Feng turned around. She really looked beautiful as she healed Emperor Yu. Even Lin Feng who was used to being with beautiful women sighed.

Lin Feng smiled at Mu Yun in a gentle and warm way.

Mu Yun nodded at him but was surprised when she saw Lin Feng's resplendent smile. Apart from helping her teacher, she also allowed them to live with their tribe. She looked at them in a gentle way, they were different from all the men she had met in her life. They looked like they had gone through many hardships.

"Lin Feng is here every day, and he has nothing to do. He's not even practicing cultivation. Even if he wanted to be in a relationship with you, I wouldn't agree." said Papa Bai jokingly. They were sitting on a bamboo chair looking at a tree. In the desert, a tree was a grand thing.

Mu Yun smiled thinly, and Papa Bai didn't say anything.

That night, the desert became cold as the sun set. Papa Bai and Mu Yun went back to their houses while Lin Feng went back to his courtyard. But suddenly, someone appeared in front of him with a mad look in his eyes. Then, a hand filled with thunderous energies grabbed his throat, "It's been ten days! I've waited long enough!"

Lin Feng frowned. Emperor Yu came out of his cottage and said coldly, "Let him go."

"If he doesn't transmit the rest of the scriptures to me, I'll kill him!" said the thunder emperor madly. Lin Feng nodded and said, "Alright, let's go outside to the desert, I don't want to release my godly awareness here."

This time, the emperor was happily speechless. He hadn't thought that Lin Feng would immediately accept. He smiled and let go of Lin Feng, "Ah good, you should have done that before, I won't hurt you anyways!"

"Let's go out." said Lin Feng. The emperor, Emperor Yu and Lin

Feng were extremely fast as they flew in the night. In just a few seconds, they were already outside, and there was nobody in sight.

“Alright, here is good. Let’s do it!” said the emperor impatiently.

“Master, don’t think of killing us to destroy any evidence. I also have the Dream Of Life Ancient Scriptures, which in a month, I’ll transmit them to you.” said Lin Feng. The thunder emperor smiled and said, “Alright, alright. How could I ever kill you guys anyways?”

He was thinking, “Lin Feng is very vigilant, he wants to protect himself with that Dream Of Life Ancient Scriptures. No problem, I’ll wait until I have all his treasures and kill him then.”

He was confident that a cultivator of the seventh Zun Qi layer couldn’t possibly pose a threat to him, and Emperor Yu was an emperor from a small world and he was injured, so he couldn’t fight against him either.

“Master, I’m starting.” said Lin Feng who was condensing his godly awareness. The thunder emperor’s eyes twinkled with excitement!

Lin Feng’s godly awareness moved into his third eye, but he couldn’t relax at all. He kept glancing at Emperor Yu.

However, a black strength penetrated the thunder emperor’s third eye.

He frowned after he sensed something. Then he suddenly opened his eyes and lightning emerged from them.

# Chapter 1532: Celestial Castles

---

He sensed cursing strength and a destructive godly awareness invade him. Lin Feng was just a cultivator of the seventh Zun Qi layer and yet he dared plot against him!

Thunders boomed, and lightning shot out from the emperor.

“Boom!” the thunder emperor was shaking as some soul cursing energies exploded in his brain.

“Die!” Lin Feng’s godly awareness was still invading the thunder emperor’s brain. He was also using his godly awareness palace with the soul cursing energies. He knew he couldn’t kill his enemy, so he was trying to stun him.

Emperor Yu was an emperor, so he already knew what Lin Feng was going to do. While Lin Feng used his broken soul godly awareness on the thunder emperor, Emperor Yu attacked and released his most powerful cosmic energies. He immediately struck the thunder emperor.

“Argh!” the thunder emperor shouted furiously. Suddenly, he released an infinite amount of thunder energies which crashed onto Emperor Yu’s body. Emperor Yu had already made an armor out of cosmic energies for Lin Feng, but it broke away easily.

“Argh!” Lin Feng shouted like a demon.

Now, Lin Feng’s sword lights moved towards the enemy.

“Kaboom!” thunders descended from the sky as a thunder god illusion appeared. This illusion was also holding a thunder hammer.

“What a powerful spirit!” thought Emperor Yu.

Emperor Yu jumped forwards and released terrifying energies in the thunder emperor’s direction. His physical body exploded and was destroyed, but because his spirit was so powerful, it didn’t die

with his body.

Emperor Yu rose up in the air and released more cosmic energies to attack that spirit. With that, the enemy's spirit slowly faded. But the spirit didn't stop, it started running away instead.

Emperor Yu and Lin Feng were lying on the ground. Emperor Yu's injuries were even more severe. Lin Feng's organs were injured as well. They hadn't even managed to kill the emperor completely. Unfortunately, one more attack and they would have managed to kill him. But at least they were out of danger for now.

"Teacher, are you alright?" Lin Feng crawled on the ground.

"Could be better. Let's go back." said Emperor Yu smiling and crawling up as well. He then said, "Lin Feng, you already did a great job. He managed to escape because his soul is stronger than many low-level emperors from Ba Huang. I used cosmic energies and destroyed his physical body but not his soul. Of course, I'm injured, otherwise I could have done better."

"Indeed." said Lin Feng laughing. They had been loud, so people were surely going to find out about them.

They both immediately went back to the fortress.

As expected, people were shouting and panicking after they heard the battle.

Lin Feng and Emperor Yu got away from the crowd. They couldn't expose themselves otherwise other enemies might find them.

They opened the main gate and entered. There was someone sitting on a stone chair, illuminated by the bright moon.

"You're back. You shouldn't go outside because you're injured." said the girl, smiling in a gentle way. Then, she looked at Lin Feng and said, "What happened? Did some of the young men from the tribe bully you? Tomorrow, I will check your injuries, but you two should sleep for now."



Then, the girl slowly walked out of the fortress. As she passed by Lin Feng, he could smell her perfume.

After she left, they closed the gate behind them. Then, Lin Feng and Emperor Yu glanced at each other and walked to the courtyard silently. What was happening outside no longer had anything to do with them.

Lin Feng and Emperor Yu slept all night. The next day, Mu Yun continued healing Emperor Yu; she checked his injuries and released pure celestial energies without saying anything. Then, her energies flew throughout Emperor Yu's body and healed him. She noticed that his injuries were worse than the day before, but she said nothing.

"Let me see that now." said Mu Yun to Lin Feng, after she finished with Emperor Yu.

Lin Feng nodded and stretched out his arms. He put his hands on her hands and she released pure celestial again.

"Why do they call you a Priestess?" asked Lin Feng trying to think of something to say.

"Because we don't live for ourselves. We live for other people." said Mu Yun gently.

"You don't live for yourselves?" Lin Feng continued, "Everybody respects you and many men are attracted by you in the tribe, isn't that good?"

"The nine celestial palaces choose girls from different tribes and teach them particular powers. Although everybody respects those Priestesses, we don't have much freedom. Our everything belongs to those celestial castles, including our lives." said Mu Yun in a gentle voice. She didn't know why she said all this to Lin Feng, but maybe it was because she knew Lin Feng's secret!

"You're from the small world, so you probably haven't been to the big cities yet. When you're both cured, I'll take you out and

show you the celestial castle.” said Mu Yun with a smile.

# Chapter 1533: Celestial Qi Castle

---

“How do you know that I’m from a small world?” asked Lin Feng.

“The Celestial Qi Castle has been pretty agitated recently. Border controls have become stricter and they sent even strong cultivators to inspect the desert. They’re even capturing people from abroad. Yesterday evening, I heard sounds coming from your cottage and came over, but when I arrived you weren’t there anymore. Then things happened outside, and after it stopped, you came back. From all of that, I guessed you were from a small world.”

“Thank you for keeping our secrecy.” said Lin Feng wholeheartedly.

“Don’t thank me, I’m just doing my best. Some dangerous things might happen to you soon. The Celestial Qi Castle probably knows about yesterday evening already.” said Mu Yun. Lin Feng’s eyes twinkled as he said, “Alright, then we should leave. Will we be safer if we go to another tribe?”

Mu Yun shook her head, “All the Priestesses belong to them. I do too. If you go elsewhere, you’ll draw more attention. If you stay here, I can do my best to help you. Besides, I told you I’d bring you elsewhere when you’re cured. Do you understand?”

“Alright, I’m going to concoct some more medicine for you.” said Mu Yun.

“We’re lucky.” said Emperor Yu after Mu Yun left. Lin Feng nodded. Indeed, they were lucky. Mu Yun was so gentle. Anyone else would have alerted the authorities.

“Creak!” the door suddenly opened. Mu Yun’s facial expression changed. “Some people are here!”

“Yun!” said a voice. Lin Feng and Emperor Yu’s facial expressions changed drastically. Mu Yun talked to them using telepathy, “If

anyone asks, you're my father and my big brother!"

Then she left the room and said, "I'm here!"

A young man opened the main gate of the tribe. He looked at Mu Yun and smiled, "Yun, long time no see!"

It was a handsome young man who didn't look like someone from the tribe.

"What are you doing here?" asked Mu Yun calmly. However, the young man's face changed a little as he looked at a cottage in a cold way.

"There are people inside!" said the young man in a cold way. Then, he rushed towards the cottage and destroyed the door. He found two people inside.

They all glanced at each other.

Mu Yun looked nervous. She was worried that the young man had already seen them before.

Mu Yun was right to fear; Lin Feng and Emperor Yu knew him. That young man had also seen both Lin Feng and Emperor Yu before. He was Qi Yu Chen.

What a coincidence.

"Yun, who are they?" At that moment, Qi Yu Chen saw a yellow-faced, middle-aged man who looked sick and injured. His Qi wasn't very strong either.

And there was also a young man, his face was dark, and he had no Qi. No matter how you looked at him, he looked ordinary.

"How unlucky." thought Lin Feng.

"Qi Yu Chen, what's that supposed to mean?" asked Mu Yun in a cold way. She walked to Lin Feng, put her hand on Lin Feng's hand, and said to Qi Yu Chen coldly, "Piss off, don't disturb my dad and brother!"

Qi Yu Chen's facial expression suddenly changed, brother and father?

"Yun, you know I didn't mean to bother them." said Qi Yu Chen. He looked sincerely apologetic.

"I don't care, go away!" said Mu Yun. Qi Yu Chen smiled and said, "Alright, let's go and talk. I need to tell you something." said Qi Yu Chen before he walked away.

"Brother, dad, sorry for that." said Mu Yun in a gentle and warm away. Qi Yu Chen looked even more sorry after he heard that.

"Yun, how come I've never heard about your brother and father?" asked Qi Yu Chen.

"Why would I tell you about that?" said Mu Yun. Qi Yu Chen smiled wryly and said, "Yun, I'm sorry for what happened."

"It's already too late." said Mu Yun. Qi Yu Chen was speechless, he could only change the topic now, "Yun, yesterday evening, something happened here that I'm sure you've heard about already. Are there any strangers here?"

"There are no strangers here and if there were, I haven't seen them." said Mu Yun.

"Alright, be careful. I'll go and inspect the tribe with my team." said Qi Yu Chen.

After Qi Yu Chen was far enough away, Mu Yun went back to Lin Feng's cottage. She looked at Lin Feng and Mu Yun's new faces with surprise. Then she laughed and asked, "Which face is your real one?"

"What do you think?" asked Lin Feng before he took off the mask. He smiled and said, "I've already seen Qi Yu Chen, who is he to you?"

"A young master of the Celestial Qi Castle. He's a direct descendent so his social status is very high!" said Mu Yun. She

didn't seem to like him, but he was quite polite to her. With his social status, he could easily do anything he wanted to her, but he didn't.

"Is the Celestial Qi Castle the head of the Qi Clan?" whispered Lin Feng.

"He seems to like you very much." said Lin Feng smiling. Mu Yun smiled wryly, she didn't know whether it was a good or bad thing.

"Use your other face. Although you've been here for a while, you haven't walked around a lot, so not many people know you. I'll continue making medicine for you and in a few days, we'll go to the Celestial Qi Castle together." said Mu Yun. As Mu Yun had said, Qi Yu Chen didn't find anything. Lin Feng hadn't drawn people's attention in the tribe either.

After Qi Yu Chen found nothing, he left for another place. Lin Feng felt relieved. Thanks to Mu Yun, Lin Feng and Emperor Yu were recovering quickly, especially Lin Feng whose injuries were easier to heal.

Several peaceful days passed. Lin Feng had already spent two months in that world now. Lin Feng's skin was much darker, tanned from the sun in that desert.

The sun was red and was slowly sinking beyond the horizon. Someone approached Lin Feng and smiled, "Do you miss your hometown?"

"I miss my friends and family members." said Lin Feng smiling. He missed Meng Qing and Qiu Yue Xin. How strong had they become?

"You still have some people to miss, at least." said Mu Yun smiling. Then she continued, "I'm going to the Celestial Qi Castle tomorrow, we can go altogether."

"Tomorrow!" whispered Lin Feng. Two months had passed, so he finally had to leave.

# Chapter 1534: Qing Di Mountain

---

“If Celestial Qi Castle is the backing of the Qi Clan, and Emperor Dong is the leader of the Qi Clan in the small world, then the Qi Clan must only be a subgroup.” thought Lin Feng. Qi Yu Chen had come to the tribe to inspect it, so how strong was the Celestial Qi Castle in the great world?

“Yun, we’re at the border of the great world, and we can go to small worlds from here. Just how strong are the nine celestial castles exactly?” asked Lin Feng. He knew nothing about the castles. Since they were leaving, he needed to know a bit more.

“The place that connects to the small world is in this gigantic desert. Each city has the name of a powerful group, for example, Celestial Qi City is named after the Celestial Qi Castle.” said Mu Yun to Lin Feng. “The nine celestial castles also make up the nine great cities. The Celestial Qi Castle is one of them. They also control some of small worlds which you can access from the desert. The Celestial Qi Castle, the Celestial Si Kong Castle and the Celestial Palace of the Punishing Thunders have been controlling small worlds for ten thousand years already.

“Celestial Palace of the Punishing Thunders, Celestial Si Kong Castle, Celestial Qi Castle!” Lin Feng suddenly understood a lot more. The Celestial Qi Castle and the Celestial Si Kong Castle were obviously the leaders of the Qi Clan and the Si Kong Clan. Concerning the Celestial Palace of the Punishing Thunders, Lin Feng was thinking about the Messenger who knew the Punishing Thunder Heart Sutra.

“Why ten thousand years?” asked Lin Feng.

“Controlling several small worlds is extremely advantageous. There are some arrangements, I don’t know the details, but I know that every ten thousand years, they fight to see who will control the worlds. Besides, it seems like those ten thousand years have

already passed, so the leaders of the small worlds will change again.”

Lin Feng understood that everything going on in the small world probably had something to do with all that.

“Now, you understand why those people are looking for you.” said Mu Yun in a gentle way. She had compassion for him. She was a Priestess who had no freedom, she was controlled by the same people who controlled small world. They were all like pawns to these groups of influence.

“Apart from the nine castles, other groups can’t decide who the next leaders will be. In this world, only strength matters. Apart from the celestial castles, there are many terrifying cities also located in the desert. They all belong to one place: the Qing Di Mountain!”

“Great Emperor Qing founded the Qing Di Mountain. Usually, they don’t get involved in affairs related to the outside world. It’s more like a holy cultivation place. Those who can practice cultivation in the Qing Di Mountain are rare, but in theory anyone could go there, including people from the celestial castles. The Celestial Wen Castle had a disciple go to the Qing Di Mountain, therefore, according to rumors, the Celestial Wen Castle might gain control over the small worlds again.” said Mu Yun. Lin Feng was surprised again. Celestial Wen Castle and the Wen Clan from the central part of Ba Huang!

“Yun, Ten thousand years ago, the Celestial Wen Castle controlled the small worlds, and later on the Celestial Si Kong Castle, and then Celestial Qi Castle took control over them?” asked Lin Feng.

“Indeed. The nine celestial palaces can’t break the equilibrium of the small worlds, no matter who is in control, they can’t because it would have an impact on the controllers. Rules have always existed but last time I heard my teacher say that some things were



going to change drastically this time.”

“No wonder the Wen Clan is so mysterious. They’re like the Qi Clan and the Si Kong Clan, they also control a part of the world in the form of the Watchers. Maybe the small world will be theirs in the next ten thousand years.” thought Lin Feng.

The assassins allowed the Watchers to exist because they had to respect the equilibrium of the small world. It was also because they didn’t know who the next controllers would be. Without the equilibrium, the Watchers would have been annihilated a long time ago.

“Yun, thank you so much for helping us.” said Lin Feng.

“You’re not completely healed yet, so you should rest early.” said Yun smiling before she left.

Lin Feng lied down for a long time before he went back to his cottage and told Emperor Yu what Mu Yun had told him.

The next day, the sun was high in the sky and was scorching hot. Mu Yun had changed her clothes into a skin-tight leather, showing off her perfect body.

Lin Feng and Emperor Yu followed her as they traveled to the Celestial Qi Castle.

“Yun!” shouted Rong Qing in the distance. Then he ran towards her and said, “Yun, are you going to buy some things in the Celestial Qi Castle? If so, I’m coming with you.”

Rong Qing also glanced at Lin Feng.

“No. I’m a Priestess, so nothing can happen to me.” said Mu Yun. Rong Qing shook his head and said, “The Celestial Qi Castle is capturing people nowadays, so I’m worried about you. I’m coming with you and I’ll protect you.”

Rong Qing was kind of right actually, so Mu Yun nodded and said, “Alright, come then.”

After that, all of them flew away.

The six of them flew over many tribes, hundreds in fact. Each tribe looked like a city, some were even larger than Xue Yue.

Finally, they finally approached a larger city. It was the first time that Lin Feng had seen a real city since arriving in that world. The buildings were huge, lofty, and they were thousands of meters high.

“Right now there are some things going on in the small worlds, so you can’t fly in. Instead, you must go through the gate while proving that you are from a tribe.” said Mu Yun.

“You don’t need to worry about that though, I’m a Priestess and you’re with me.” said Mu Yun.

“Let’s go.” said Mu Yun as she walked towards the guards. But at that moment, the ground quaked as many people riding beasts approached, they were galloping at full speed, making the ground shake below them.

“Why are they here? They’re early!” Mu Yun frowned when she saw those riders.

# Chapter 1535: Bronze Plate

---

“What’s wrong?” asked Lin Feng.

“Those knights are people from the Celestial Qi Castle, but they usually don’t leave the city. They usually only go out when people compete to control the small worlds. They usually go to all the tribes and inform people, and at the same time, they also recall all the Priestesses of the tribes.” said Mu Yun. The knights continued galloping, passing in front of Lin Feng and the others.

Very quickly, the knight rode away and disappeared into the desert.

“Only one force could have made that happen.” whispered Mu Yun: “Qing Di Mountain!”

Lin Feng and the others then walked to the gate. The guards were strict as they checked everybody.

“Master, I’m from a tribe, and we want to enter the Celestial Qi Castle.” said Mu Yun to a guard. He looked at her and smiled, he seemed to know her as he said familiarly, “Miss Mu Yun! You’re always welcome!”

Then, Mu Yun and the others went in. Even though Priestesses were from tribes, they were members of the celestial castles. Therefore, she was confident that Lin Feng and Emperor Yu could go in with her.

After they entered, she explained to them, “That’s the Celestial Qi Castle. Even though it seems very near, it’s actually very far away.” whispered Mu Yun. Lin Feng looked at the gigantic, and ancient castle in awe. Destroying such a castle would definitely be a spectacular show!

“The nine celestial castles represent a tripartite balance of power, with a buffer zone in the middle. We’re going to that buffer zone now. They have the best market there. You can surely find

anything there.” said Mu Yun. Lin Feng nodded.

“I’ve heard that many years ago, the nine castles used to be one, and that strong cultivators gradually emerged and divided the city. Of course, that was a very, very long time ago, so we can’t know if that’s true or not. If you cross the buffer zone, you’ll leave the nine great celestial castles and arrive in another one of the cities of the Qing Di Mountain.”

Mu Yun was talking a lot, she was pretending to be a guide, but she was actually telling Lin Feng how to leave if he needed.

“Yun, why would we go so far? We can find a market in the Celestial Qi Castle, that’d be enough.” said Rong Qing behind her. She kept talking to Lin Feng so Rong Qing was getting jealous. Besides, The Celestial Qi City was a gigantic place, going to the buffer zone would take a long time.

“I’ve never been there, so I really want to see it.” said Mu Yun. Rong Qing was speechless, so he just glanced at Lin Feng angrily. Why was Mu Yun being so nice to him? Had they fallen in love after living together for two months? Luckily, that foreigner was going to leave soon, he couldn’t take Mu Yun away after all.

“You’ve never been to the buffer zone?” said Lin Feng surprised.

“Is it strange? Many people from the tribes are like me, most people from the Celestial Qi City never leave this place either.”

“Aren’t there powerful alchemists or healers in that place?” asked Lin Feng. He was still worried about Emperor Yu.

“I was going to tell you about that. In the nine great celestial castles, there’s a powerful group called the Palace of Medicinal Kings, and they have some very powerful healers. However, it’s difficult to get seen by them.” said Mu Yun.

They walked and talked at the same time. Mu Yun told Lin Feng many things about the great world, including the locations of the nine great celestial castles. She also told him about the Great

Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, and their strong cultivators who mastered golden holy Qi skills. After she told him that, Lin Feng immediately thought about two people: Zhou Tian Xiao and Zhou Tian Ruo.

Even though the Celestial Qi City was just a city on the edge of the great world, Lin Feng found the buildings astonishing and even terrifying. It took them an entire day to cross the city to the buffer zone. They even had to run during part of the day.

Finally, Lin Feng arrived in the buffer zone. It was even larger than Celestial Qi City and there were even more people. Even though Mu Yun had never been there, she had heard about it, especially the market. The buildings were resplendent and magnificent. Lin Feng had seen many priceless holy weapons in the small world, but there, they were numerous. There were even high-level holy weapons which left Lin Feng speechless.

“Mister, what’s that broken piece of bronze?” asked Mu Yun to a vendor.

“Broken piece of bronze? Miss, I got it from the Everlasting Cave of the Immortals, don’t you know it? It’s the everlasting celestial emperor’s cave. Everyone admired him a long time ago.” said the old man who was scratching his long beard.

“How much does it cost?” asked Mu Yun.

“A hundred abstruse energy tablets.” said the old man.

“Yun, it’s a rip off. Let’s go.” said Rong Qing rolling his eyes. Did the old man think he was dumb? That was just a broken piece of bronze.

“Little boy, don’t talk nonsense. Do you know who the everlasting celestial emperor is? He controlled three thousand great protection spells, a 108,000 small protection spells, he can even use the sky to create protective areas.” said the old man. Rong Qing rolled his eyes, what did the emperor have to do with that

piece of bronze though?

Mu Yun shook her head and walked away. That was too expensive anyways.

“Let’s go.” said Mu Yun to Lin Feng. “I just had the sensation that item was different, but when I touched it, nothing happened.”

Lin Feng shrugged. The price was way too high.

“Hey, wait!” said the old man to Lin Feng, “Your girlfriend likes it, so won’t you buy it for her? Even ten abstruse energy tablets will be fine. I guarantee you that it’s one of the Everlasting Celestial Emperor’s items, look at the two words carved on it.”

Lin Feng frowned but looked anyways, and he did see two words.

“Eh?” Lin Feng shivered. That thing made his spirit shake. His eyes suddenly became pitch-black as he inspected it.

Lin Feng’s reaction made Mu Yun and the others stop. Rong Qing still looked unhappy, surprisingly, the old man thought Mu Yun was Lin Feng’s girlfriend.

“How about five abstruse tablets?” asked Lin Feng.

The old man’s eyes twinkled, “Eight, that’s my final price.”

“Alright, forget about it then.” said Lin Feng throwing the bronze plate at the old man. “Alright, five, that’s a deal!” said the old man desperately.

Lin Feng took the bronze plate back and gave the old man five abstruse tablets.

# Chapter 1536: Exposed!

---

Lin Feng's celestial book spirit reacted in a strange way when he looked at that tablet. Besides, Lin Feng had now broken through to the seventh Zun Qi layer, and his abstruse energies were at a high level, so he couldn't use abstruse tablets anymore to improve his abstruse energies. Therefore, five abstruse tablets weren't that much for him.

"It seems like that thing must be good for my spirit. What a strange treasure." thought Lin Feng smiling indifferently. Then Mu Yun asked Lin Feng, "Why did you want that?"

"Didn't you say that thing was different? I also sensed something, so I bought it." said Lin Feng. At the same time, he glanced around to see if there were other nice treasures.

Mu Yun stopped and walked to another vendor's booth. It was an old man in ragged clothes. He had some medicinal herbs to sell. His stand was messy, so people didn't seem interested. However, Mu Yun seemed interested. She was looking at some red rhizome.

She bent down and said: "Mister, what is the price?"

The old man replied, "Twenty abstruse tablets."

"Twenty!" Mu Yun didn't find that too expensive, the old man didn't even seem to know what that herb was. Maybe a fate seed wasn't even enough for that normally. The problem was Mu Yun hadn't sold the animal's body, so she had no abstruse tablets to bargain with yet.

"I have some. Take them." Lin Feng gave Mu Yun some abstruse tablets. Mu Yun took them and gave them to the old man, "I want it."

"Alright, take it." said the old man.

"Eh?" However, at that moment, Lin Feng frowned and released cold energies. Immediately after, he recalled his Qi after he

remembered he was in the Celestial Qi Castle. He walked back as a gigantic hand was moving towards Mu Yun.

“What are you doing?” shouted Mu Yun. That hand turned into a terrifying fire and crashed onto Mu Yun’s hand. Then someone stole her rhizome.

“Boom!” a brutal Qi filled the sky as Rong Qing and the others started running.

“Wait!” shouted Mu Yun. Rong Qing and the two others stopped.

“Linda, what’s that supposed to mean?” said Mu Yun.

“I want it.” said Linda to the old man. “Thirty abstruse tablets, what do you think?”

“Alright!” said the old man nodding. Linda took out thirty abstruse tablets and gave them to the old man. Rong Qing and the others looked at them in a cold way. The old man said to Mu Yun, “Take your twenty tablets back.”

“I already bought it! Who do you think you are to cancel the transaction?” asked Mu Yun. What a greedy old bastard!

“I’m not getting involved anymore. Just handle your things yourself then.” said the old man. He put his things away and left.

Mu Yun looked at Linda coldly and said, “Give me the dragon heart grass back.”

“I bought it. Why would I give it back to you? Go and find the old man if you want some more.” said Linda. How could she give up? That thing was worth at least a fate seed.

“You’re shameless!” shouted Mu Yun furiously. But the two people who were with Linda were too strong. She wouldn’t be able to take it back.

“Are you a man or not!” shouted Rong Qing to Lin Feng. He knew that Lin Feng was strong, and that Mu Yun had done so much for him.



“Rong Qing!” said Mu Yun in a cold way to Rong Qing, “Let’s go.”

Then, she turned around and left. She didn’t even glance at Lin Feng, making him feel guiltier. It was true that she had done so much for him.

“Boom!” An arrow flew, causing the sky to shake. Immediately after that, the two people who were next to Rong Qing were enveloped, and they gave horrible shrieks as they gradually died.

Mu Yun’s face turned deathly pale. She turned around looking upset. She ran towards her servants, stretching out her hands, and two celestial lights appeared. But it was useless, they were dead already.

“People from your tribe attacked my people first.” said Linda smiling coldly. Then, a powerful fire abstruse energy moved towards Rong Qing.

“Let him off!” shouted Mu Yun loudly.

“He wanted to kill me, so how could I let him off?” said Linda smiling indifferently. The strong fire cultivator continued running towards Rong Qing with fire in his hands.

“Die!” said that cultivator who was laughing mockingly. However, at that moment, the fire turned black, pitch-black like death and it disappeared. Then he slowly collapsed.

Mu Yun turned around and saw Lin Feng. What was that Qi? Cursing energy? She hadn’t seen Lin Feng chanting any mantras just before.

Rong Qing was amazed too, but Mu Yun just put her hand on his arm and said, “Let’s go.”

She knew that Lin Feng and Emperor Yu didn’t want to draw people’s attention. They had already drawn too many people’s attention by now. Soon there would be a crowd, and then they might be found out.

Then, Mu Yun left. Rong Qing was furious as he shouted at Lin Feng, “Any of the beasts in the desert have more compassion than you.”

Lin Feng ignored Rong Qing. He didn’t know Lin Feng had saved his life. He didn’t know what had happened exactly.

Many people rushed over. Emperor Yu said, “Lin Feng!”

“Yes!” said Lin Feng nodding. He knew what Emperor Yu meant. They changed their faces again.

“Yun, after we leave, let’s disperse. Please take care.” said Lin Feng to Mu Yun.

“Alright, you take care as well.” said Mu Yun. She knew what Lin Feng needed to do.

“Yun!” said someone in the distance, it was Qi Yu Chen and some young men.

“Uncles!” said Qi Yu Chen to Lin Feng and Emperor Yu.

“What a coincidence. But we unfortunately have some things to do, so we must be going.” said Mu Yun while dragging Emperor Yu and Lin Feng with her. Rong Qing looked furious, “Those people are foreigners, they can easily change their faces!” shouted Rong Qing. In a flash, it was as if time had stopped.

# Chapter 1537

---

Qi Yu Chen glanced at Mu Yun in a cold way. He had the feeling he had been fooled.

“Capture them!” shouted Qi Yu Chen. Mu Yun wouldn’t have thought that Rong Qing would do something like that to her.

“Let’s go.” shouted Mu Yun to Lin Feng and emperor Yu. Then their silhouettes flickered as they ran away.

“Jin Chen Jun!” shouted Qi Yu Chen. His voice traveled very far away in the distance.

The buffer zone was the center of the nine great celestial castles, so the guards from all the surrounding castles heard that.

Qi Yu Chen didn’t leave. He chased Mu Yun while asking, “Why betray me?”

Mu Yun looked furiously. Qi Yu Chen was shouting so loud, loud enough that more people would come. “Qi Yu Chen, I don’t even know you, so I couldn’t possibly betray you! You’re just a nobody to me!”

“Alright, alright!” Qi Yu Chen was furious. He tried to remain calm though, “Mu Yun, you’re a Priestess, so you’ll have to be punished for protecting those people who are wanted by the Celestial Qi Castle.”

“No problem!” said Mu Yun. As Rong Qing heard them talk, he felt guilty. He was too impulsive. Maybe now Mu Yun would die.

“If Lin Feng hadn’t attacked a moment ago, you’d be dead! And surprisingly you betrayed him!” said Mu Yun. She looked really crushed, “Rong Qing, you’re the worst kind of person!”

Mu Yun’s words stabbed Rong Qing’s heart. Lin Feng had helped him?

“How? How could it be him?” Rong Qing kept shaking his head.

He didn't believe it.

"I saw it with my own eyes. Who else could have helped you!" said Mu Yun.

Lin Feng and Emperor Yu kept running while people were chasing them. Even though they weren't emperors, they were cultivators at the top of the Zun Qi layer, so the two leaders of the group were especially strong.

"The 'space' of the small world and the great world are different. It seems like even emperors can't go into empty spaces here. Escaping will be very difficult. Lin Feng, you go, you might have a chance to escape if I stay back."

Why was his teacher doing that again?

"He might die if he does that." thought Lin Feng.

"Some emperors are chasing us. Lin Feng, you have to leave!" said Emperor Yu. However, Lin Feng suddenly stopped, he didn't continue running away.

"Teacher, they don't want to kill me. Besides, I want to see how many people they've already captured. You go instead!" said Lin Feng to his teacher using telepathy. Emperor Yu was incredulous as Lin Feng flew away. The Celestial Qi Castle, who controlled the Imperial Assassin Union, didn't want to kill the geniuses, they wanted to use them rather. Emperor Yu was different, he was an injured emperor, so he was useless to them. If they captured him, they'd kill him.

"Teacher, you go!" shouted Lin Feng to Emperor Yu. Emperor Yu then continued running. He didn't know what to think at that moment.

What could he do though? Lin Feng had already made himself a sacrifice, so Emperor Yu could only run away.

Jin Chen Jun caught up and looked at Lin Feng. Emperor Yu was already gone.

“Did you really think they could capture me?” shouted Lin Feng while releasing demonic energies, as well as sword energies.

“Die!” sword lights streaked across the sky. The one who was chasing Lin Feng was horrified as he watched Lin Feng’s sword lights cut him in two. The ones behind him suddenly stopped. They looked scared.

Jin Chen Jun wanted to chase Emperor Yu, but he heard Lin Feng’s voice and turned around. After watching one of them die instantly, he had to agree that those people couldn’t capture him, only he could.

Lin Feng looked at Jin Chen Jun and said, “I’m not weak and my teacher is injured, so even if you caught up with him, it would be pointless!”

Jin Chen Jun looked at Lin Feng, he looked rather excited as he said, “Stomping out the source of trouble is always the best thing to do in case of a threat. I will let him off for now because you’re quite strong, and I don’t want other people to recruit you.”

Lin Feng was relieved. Even though Jin Chen Jun only let his teacher off temporarily, at least, he’d have the chance to escape.

“Where are we going?” asked Lin Feng.

“To the Celestial Qi Castle of course. Don’t worry, I won’t harm you. If you stick with me, you’ll have a bright future.” said Jin Chen Jun smiling. Lin Feng didn’t trust him though, he was sure Jin Chen Jun wasn’t going to kill him, but during the banquet in the Qi Empire, those from Ba Huang had gone back and killed their teachers. What could have made them do that?

“Can I have some time to solve an issue?” asked Lin Feng to Jin Chen Jun.

“No problem, just stay in my field of vision.” said Jin Chen Jun nodding. He seemed quite friendly.

“Thank you.” said Lin Feng politely. Then, he turned around,

and those who had chased him before let him pass. They looked at him in a cold way, but they couldn't do anything to him.

# Chapter 1538: Danger

---

Lin Feng went back to Mu Yun, but Jin Chen Jun was fixedly staring at him. He wouldn't let Lin Feng leave.

Mu Yun felt guilty, she understood what was going on, "Lin Feng, I'm sorry, it's all my fault."

Mu Yun was thinking that if she hadn't brought Rong Qing with them, Lin Feng would be safe and could have escaped.

"Yun, don't say that, I shouldn't have gotten you involved." said Lin Feng smiling in a gentle way. Mu Yun was a kindhearted Priestess. Everything was actually Rong Qing's fault.

Qi Yu Chen looked at them coldly while saying, "Jin Chen Jun, thank you!"

"I'm just fulfilling my duty." said Jin Chen Jun smiling. "The Priestess protected him, so what do you intend to do?"

"I'm taking her back to the Celestial Qi Castle." said Qi Yu Chen. Lin Feng wasn't hiding his face anymore, so Qi Yu Chen knew who he was.

"Jin Chen Jun, that person's name is Lin Feng. He defeated Zhou Tian Ruo and Qiao Chi Feng. He knows many different things. Bring him back to the Celestial Qi Castle personally." said Qi Yu Chen. Zhou Tian Ruo was a cultivator from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness and controlled golden holy Qi. Qiao Chi Feng was a cultivator from the Celestial transformation Palace.

"That's what I intended to do." said Jin Chen Jun.

Lin Feng walked to Rong Qing and looked at him in a cold way. Lin Feng had saved him and in exchange, Rong Qing had betrayed him.

"Your mistake won't only get other people killed, it will get you killed as well." said Lin Feng.

Rong Qing didn't dare look at Lin Feng, he regretted everything. He hadn't thought his actions would have such repercussions. But what he thought wasn't important anymore. A death Qi surrounded his body and started slowly corroding his life.

"No, don't kill me, I didn't know it was you!" said Rong Qing shaking his head. He didn't want to die, but Lin Feng's death Qi was terrifying.

"Die!" said Lin Feng. Rong Qing's life was slowly being drained. He was petrified, and then he slowly collapsed, dead.

"That's death abstruse energy as well as cursing energy. What a terrifying technique!" thought Jin Chen Jun. He didn't know what kind of skill or technique Lin Feng had used, but that was only natural because Lin Feng had created the attack himself.

"Let's go." said Lin Feng to Jin Chen Jun naturally. He didn't know what the Celestial Qi Castle had planned for them.

"Please." said Jin Chen Jun politely to Lin Feng. Lin Feng nodded at Mu Yun and they both rose up in the air. Even though they were in the buffer zone, they could clearly see Celestial Qi Castle in the distance.

All of the eight other castles were the same. They were extremely far, but because they were gigantic, every one of them were visible from the buffer zone.

Jin Chen Jun and Qi Yu Chen followed Lin Feng and Mu Yun. They didn't stay too far away, just in case Lin Feng tried something.

After a short time, they arrived at the castle.

"Celestial Qi Castle!" Lin Feng raised his head and looked at the castle.

"Go up!" said Jin Chen Jun. Lin Feng and Mu Yun climbed the flight of stairs. Finally, they arrived at a flat area.



“Jin Chen Jun, bring him to the main palace. I’m going to inform Master Mi.” said Qi Yu Chen to Jin Chen Jun. Jin Chen Jun nodded back. Then Qi Yu Chen left and took Lin Feng and Mu Yun to another room.

“What will they do to you, Yun?” asked Lin Feng to Mu Yun using telepathy.

“I don’t know. I’m a Priestess, so I don’t have any freedom. In the past, Qi Yu Chen was polite to me, but now I infuriated him, so he will probably punish me.” said Mu Yun sadly. Her life was in Qi Yu Chen’s hands.

“Lin Feng, don’t worry about me. I’ve heard of Master Mi, he’s a terrifying emperor. He knows some special skills which can leave imprints on people’s souls, forcing them to obey Celestial Qi Castle. Qi Yu Chen said he was going to inform him so maybe they’re planning to do that to you.”

Lin Feng frowned. He should have thought about that.

“People who use such skills aren’t easy to defeat, right? I mean, they’re not from any small worlds.” asked Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng, don’t underestimate the people who came out of your small world. Even though I don’t know the details, people like you who come out are incredibly talented and outstanding. When people like you are born in the great world, great influential powers raise them, choosing skills or techniques which are best suited for them. They are at the very least, powerful.” said Mu Yun.

“People here always join a power after they become strong enough, like the Qing Di Mountain. If you’re strong enough, you can become a cultivator of the Qing Di Mountain as well. You don’t need to pay anything either. Those who study in the Qing Di Mountain are respected by everyone. If those people notice you, you’d be lucky. Besides, the Qing Di Mountain won’t impose anything, you can choose the life you want. When you’re strong

enough, you can even stay there or choose other groups. Groups like the Celestial Qi Castle who choose to control their people aren't as powerful as the Qing Di Mountain.”

“However, the Celestial Qi Castle won't let people they control get to know people from the Qing Di Mountain, otherwise they might lose them.” said Mu Yun.

# Chapter 1539: Control Lin Feng

---

The hall they were staying in was silent. Jin Chen Jun was standing behind Lin Feng and Mu Yun to make sure they didn't try anything funny.

Lin Feng was extremely nervous. If they took control over his body, he would be doomed. However, he couldn't resist, otherwise they'd just kill him. He just had to count on his luck now.

Some of those strong cultivators had lived for hundreds or even thousands of years, so how strong could they be? It was hard to imagine.

"I'll be fine." thought Lin Feng to himself. He was trying to cheer himself up. Even if some people controlled him, at least, he'd be alive.

Mu Yun and Lin Feng were the same at that moment. Her heart was pounding, and she was very nervous about losing her life.

"Tap, tap..." Lin Feng heard some steps. Then two people arrived, one of them was Qi Yu Chen, while the other one had a mask on. But, his eyes looked particularly evil. Lin Feng's godly awareness shook violently when he saw those eyes.

"Master Mi!" said Jin Chen Jun bowing respectfully. Master Mi acted as if he hadn't seen him. His social status must be extremely high.

Master Mi fixedly stared at Lin Feng while released terrifying energies. Suddenly, Lin Feng had the impression that his thoughts were becoming chaotic. He already had such a sensation back when he met the woman in the ancient battlefield of the Huang Sea, the one who used the great dream of life cosmic energies.

"You're from the Celestial Qi Castle, you were born in the Celestial Qi Castle, you will die for the Celestial Qi Castle, the Celestial Qi Castle is your everything." said a voice in Lin Feng's

brain. He wanted to print those pieces of information in Lin Feng's brain.

“No, how could? I will destroy the Celestial Qi Castle sooner or later!” Lin Feng started resisting. He was very determined, but that voice kept resonating in his brain.

As time dragged on, Lin Feng's resistance grew less and less. The strength started overcoming him, and he forgot everything as he listened to Master Mi's voice.

“Lin Feng!” shouted Mu Yun, her face had turned pale. However, a powerful strength suddenly made her suffocate.

Jin Chen Jun glanced at Qi Yu Chen and a terrifying force surrounded Mu Yun, pushing her outside the hall.

Qi Yu Chen knew that Master Mi couldn't be disturbed, this was a crucial moment in the process. He also left the hall, leaving only Lin Feng and Master Mi together.

After a very long time, Master Mi said, “Sleep, once you wake up, you'll have a new life.”

Lin Feng slowly closed his eyes, obeying Master Mi. Then, he fell asleep and slowly fell to the floor.

Through the holes of his mask, one could see from his eyes that Master Mi looked exhausted. He closed his eyes and then opened them again. Then, he lifted Lin Feng and took him out of the hall.

Lin Feng was asleep, so he didn't know what was going on. Some white lights twinkled around his godly awareness, it was a cosmic energy: Master Mi's imprint.

But the light suddenly became dazzling, extremely dazzling, as if something was protecting Lin Feng from them. He had failed. Back then in the Shrine, the Envoy had tried to put something in Lin Feng's godly awareness but had failed too. The same thing had happened now with Master Mi.

Master Mi wasn't as strong as the Envoy, so he didn't realize it. He brought Lin Feng to another place while he was sleeping. For him, Lin Feng was already under his control. Lin Feng would be a new person after waking up and he'd work for the Celestial Qi Castle.

In another beautiful room, Mu Yun looked at Qi Yu Chen in a cold way. She was very weak, but she still hoped that everybody could be free in their world and that nobody would control anyone else. But now Lin Feng, a nice young man, was going to turn into an evil demon for the Celestial Qi Castle.

"What are you going to do with me?" asked Mu Yun to Qi Yu Chen.

Qi Yu Chen looked indifferent. He was a descendent of the Celestial Qi Castle, so he had a high social status. He wasn't spoilt though, he fought to get what he wanted. He knew that there were too many strong cultivators in their world. He could have easily gotten Mu Yun if he had forced her, but he wanted to work to make her his.

Qi Yu Chen didn't know that Mu Yun didn't dislike him, she just disliked the Celestial Qi Castle. She knew Qi Yu Chen was good to her, but she didn't want to have anything to do with the Celestial Qi Castle. If Qi Yu Chen had been from another group, then things might have been different.

"I really loved you but don't worry, I won't rape a girl who hates me. Many of those people from the small worlds will be captured, and when the time comes, we'll need someone to host ceremonies. At that time, you'll do that." said Qi Yu Chen. Mu Yun's facial expression changed drastically, and then she turned deathly pale: "Qi Yu Chen, you bastard!" She obviously knew what it meant.

"It's an honor for you, maybe some incredible people will please you sexually." said Qi Yu Chen. "Concerning your tribe, don't worry, I'll find another good Priestess for them. The people of your

tribe will love her, and they'll forget about you.”

After that, Qi Yu Chen left the room. As he was leaving he said, “Don't try to escape, you're beautiful, and there are many people who like beautiful women in the Celestial Qi Castle. They aren't as nice as me.”

Mu Yun felt powerless. She couldn't escape, and she was going to become a sex slave.

# Chapter 1540: Control

---

In a small forest, there was a great celestial Qi which made people feel extremely comfortable.

Master Mi was sitting there when someone wearing purple clothes arrived. Master Mi was startled by them, although they looked at that Master Mi respectfully, they actually despised him.

After a long time, Master Mi opened his eyes again, but he still couldn't see properly.

“Is it good now?” asked Master Mi.

“It's good now. I also asked the great master to go and check.” said the person in purple clothes respectfully.

“Alright.” said Master Mi nodding. He glanced at Lin Feng who was lying next to him. Lin Feng opened his eyes, he had been awake for a while, but he could sense that Master Mi was looking at him.

He stood up and bowed before Master Mi and that person in purple clothes. Then, he shouted respectfully, “Master!”

Master Mi looked at Lin Feng expressionlessly. Controlling a cultivator of the seventh Zun Qi layer was easy for him, so he didn't feel proud. He had practiced that technique for a thousand years already, and he had never failed. He could even control low-level emperors.

“Alright!” Master Mi finally stood up and said to Lin Feng, “Follow me.”

“Roger, Master.” said Lin Feng respectfully. The strong cultivator in purple clothes glanced at Lin Feng and followed them.

But the cultivator in purple clothes waited for Lin Feng to walk next to him and whispered, “This is the Master's small world, I know you still have your old memories, but here you must listen to

your Master and honor the Celestial Qi Castle.”

“I understand.” said Lin Feng nodding, and then he didn’t say anything else.

After a short time, they left the forest and some people appeared in their field of vision. Lin Feng calmly glanced at them.

He recognized some of the people he knew.

Ban Ruo, Li Hen, Xing Zhan. They were captured before him.

Apart from them, there was also Yuan Fei and Wu Tian from the Abyss of Sufferings.

Mu Chen had used his transformation spell to help people escape, but he couldn’t help them all. Strength was one thing, luck was another.

But it seemed that more people had escaped than he had first guessed.

Those people also saw Lin Feng. Although they were surprised, especially Yuan Fei and Tiantai’s disciples, it was only a strange feeling. For them, the Celestial Qi Castle was everything to them now. They were just surprised to see Lin Feng, so they nodded at him.

Lin Feng was furious. He wanted to kill Master Mi, but he had to control himself. Nobody seemed to know that he wasn’t being controlled. He was safe in the Celestial Qi Castle for now. Later, he would have opportunities to escape.

“Come!” said Master Mi to one of the people. It was a person from Ba Huang. He was tall and looked aggressive.

“Kill him.” said Master Mi pointing at Lin Feng. Lin Feng was startled, Master Mi wanted to check his strength.

“Argh!” That person shouted and ran towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng sensed the oppressive energies, but Lin Feng didn’t flinch. He couldn’t have Master Mi doubting him.



A gigantic hand got closer, but Lin Feng raised his hands and released demonic Qi in return. The two fists collided, and the ground beneath Lin Feng's feet exploded.

"Argh..." that cultivator raised his head and suddenly he became gigantic, he had turned into an ape.

His voice made stones explode, it also made Lin Feng's brain shake violently. He was stronger than Yuan Fei, he already had the strength of the very top of the Zun Qi layer.

"Break!" shouted Lin Feng furiously. He released force and threw it ahead.

The sky shook as the gigantic ape shouted again. Lin Feng's godly awareness shook violently, it felt as if his head was going to explode. After all, that ape had probably been there for a hundred years. Even though he hadn't broken through to the Huang Qi layer, he was still very strong.

"If he had fate seeds, do you think he'd become an emperor?" whispered Master Mi to the person in purple clothes. If it was certain that someone was going to get stuck at the top of the Zun Qi layer, it was useless to waste fate seeds on them.

"Master, he needs a force multiplied by one-thousand first. If he can't learn that, then we don't need to give him any." said the person in purple clothes. Master Mi didn't reply and continued watching the battle. The ape was on the ground now, and Lin Feng was bombarding him furiously.

"That person can already defeat the ape. This year, people are a lot stronger than a hundred years ago. Too bad those pieces of trash only managed to capture a few of them." said Master Mi, "Ask him his name, then take him to the purple army."

"Roger, Master." said the person in purple clothes. Master Mi thought Lin Feng was extremely strong. People who joined the purple army had the potential to break through to the Huang Qi

layer solely relying on their own abilities.

“Alright.” said Master Mi. The ape was going insane, but Master Mi stopped the battle. The ape then calmed down.

“Pay attention to him during the first few days.” said Master Mi. Then, he left.

“What’s your name?” asked the one in purple clothes.

“Lin Feng!” replied Lin Feng calmly. Lin Feng couldn’t lie; Yuan Fei and the others were there after all. He couldn’t hide his strength either. Yuan Fei and the others were controlled by Master Mi, so they’d report anything abnormal.

“Put those clothes on.” said the person in purple, handing purple clothes to Lin Feng. Lin Feng said nothing and put them on.

“Disperse now, but you follow me.” said the one in purple clothes. Everybody dispersed and the one in purple clothes took Lin Feng to a celestial place.

Lin Feng followed without saying anything. He was safe, that was enough.

A short time after, the one in purple clothes and Lin Feng arrived in a celestial forest where there were many other people already seated. They were practicing cultivation and their eyes were closed. They were also wearing purple clothes. Lin Feng couldn’t sense their Qi, so they were probably extremely strong.

# Chapter 1541: Dream Creation

---

“Many people here are your masters. You can ask them for advice concerning cultivation at anytime, including me.” said the one in purple clothes while walking with Lin Feng.

“Alright.” said Lin Feng nodding. Master Mi seemed like he wanted to raise Lin Feng. The Celestial Qi Castle had captured those people and their goal was to make them stronger for their own interests. Against all expectations, Lin Feng was getting excited because of that.

“All the people here must be from Ba Huang, but now they’re being controlled by the Celestial Qi Castle. How sad.” thought Lin Feng.

But apart from people who could break free, the number of people captured by the Imperial Assassin Union was already terrifying. The number of geniuses the Imperial Assassin Union had captured was terrifying.

“From now on, this place is where you can practice cultivation. You can come and find me anytime if you need some advice. They know the rules, and they won’t kill you, however, some people don’t like being disturbed. Even though they won’t kill you, they might humiliate you.” said the one in purple clothes laughing. He then walked faster and disappeared.

Lin Feng glanced at those people who were seated cross-legged. Then, his silhouette flickered as he went to the top of the waterfall. He glanced down and saw someone in the waterfall. That person was using punching attacks, but their fists had turned into ice-cubes.

“Master Mi must be a strong medium-level emperor. He must be one of the strongest cultivators of Celestial Qi Castle. Besides, this is his small world and it’s a great place to practice all sorts of cultivation.” thought Lin Feng. Then, he moved again.

Lin Feng found a place and sat down cross-legged to start practicing cultivation. He released his spirit and his celestial book spirit appeared. It was the demonic territory. Then, in his hands, a bronze tablet appeared. It was the tablet he had bought in the buffer zone.

Lin Feng put the tablet in the territory, and in a flash, lights dazzled, and the bronze tablet turned into a light which formed a gigantic building.

Lin Feng was stupefied. His spirit allowed the tablet to transform into its real form.

“Everlasting!” thought Lin Feng. Indeed, the old man had told him that item came from the Everlasting Cave of the Immortals, but that place wasn’t the Everlasting Cave of the Immortals, it was an Everlasting Celestial Palace.

“There’s nothing interesting about the palace though, it doesn’t seem useful.” thought Lin Feng shaking his head. He then put it away, the lights disappeared, and Lin Feng stopped thinking about it.

Lin Feng took out some ancient scriptures and placed them in the territory.

A long time passed in the outside world before Lin Feng opened his eyes again.

“The Dream Of Life Ancient Scriptures, a dream is made for the awareness and the awareness just wanders in a dream for a thousand years.” whispered Lin Feng. He took out a fate seed, a dream fate seed. Of course, he didn’t want to use it to break through to the Huang Qi layer, he just held it in his hand and studied its great dream strength. It gave him a feeling, like he wanted to practice the Dream of Life Ancient Scriptures.

The Dream of Life Ancient Scriptures and the Three lives scriptures were both similar in that they were ancient scriptures.

Lin Feng liked demonic cultivation and knew other types of energies. This time, he was studying the Dream of Life Ancient Scriptures, but he had the impression that he had never studied anything similar so far. Usually, people in large and powerful groups studied skills and techniques which allowed them to carry out powerful attacks, but the Dream Of Life Ancient Scriptures acted more as an assistance to cultivators.

The reason why Lin Feng was studying the Dream Of Life Ancient Scriptures was to prepare himself for the Three lives scriptures.

Gradually, Lin Feng fell into a deep meditative state. Even though studying ancient scriptures wasn't something that could be done in the blink of an eye, at Lin Feng's level, learning ancient scriptures didn't take Lin Feng that long. After half a day, he could already start dreaming and studying in that dream.

The advantage of studying in a dream was that he could focus. In a dream, everything was an illusion, but on the other hand, he really was practicing cultivation and becoming stronger.

Three days later, Lin Feng stopped practicing cultivation and went to the waterfall. The one who was there before saw Lin Feng approaching, so he raised his head. Suddenly, a gigantic hand moved towards Lin Feng.

"That's cosmic strength, how scary!" thought Lin Feng. He condensed force and jumped forwards while releasing demonic Qi. Then the punches collided.

With some crackling sounds, each of the fists broke apart. Even though cosmic energies were strong, the enemy had attacked without thinking too much, so Lin Feng broke the energies.

"You're a demonic cultivator, I can't teach you anything." said the cultivator to Lin Feng. Lin Feng walked forwards and said, "Master, I need you to help me. Please oppress me with a force that is multiplied by seven hundred, then eight hundred, then nine hundred and then a thousand."

“Are you sure?” asked his interlocutor.

“I am, thank you, Master.” Lin Feng sat down cross-legged in the waterfall before the emperor released force. Although it was very painful, he observed the force calmly and serenely.

“Interesting!” said the river emperor smiling. He was surprised, so he increased the intensity of his force.

Lin Feng groaned, but was still seated, he remained calm as if it wasn't painful.

Force multiplied by eight-hundred, nine-hundred and then one-thousand crashed onto his body. Lin Feng felt like he was going to suffocate. But he remained motionless like a mountain.

“Should I continue?” asked the river emperor. He knew that Lin Feng couldn't learn much in such a short time. The reason why people learnt force quickly in the Celestial Walls Manor was because there were eight walls with varying forces. That way, any cultivator could move from wall to wall to change the pressure at their own will. With the help of someone else, it was more difficult because they couldn't know when they had to change the intensity.

“It's alright, thank you, Master.” Lin Feng opened his eyes and left.

He went back to the place where he had been practicing cultivation and released more dream strength. Lin Feng lied down, then he started breathing slowly, and fell asleep.

Lin Feng started dreaming that the river emperor was oppressing him with force, bombarding his body continuously.

If the river emperor knew what Lin Feng was doing, he would be extremely surprised. He thought that Lin Feng didn't gain much from his help, but actually Lin Feng needed his help creating a dream to continuously practice in!

# Chapter 1542: Competing

---

Studying force in a dream was less difficult than doing it in the outside world. Lin Feng felt relaxed as he studied it in his dream.

A few days later, a silhouette appeared in front of Lin Feng, but Lin Feng didn't see that person because he was still dreaming.

The one in purple clothes frowned.

At that moment, Lin Feng was breathing slowly, he looked calm and peaceful. He had no Qi around him and the outside world didn't affect him at all. He couldn't be practicing cultivation, he was sleeping. He was sleeping too peacefully. The one in purple clothes looked unhappy about that.

"Lin Feng!" shouted the one in purple clothes. Lin Feng woke up suddenly. With his strength, he could only create low-level dreams which could easily be broken.

"Master!" said Lin Feng standing up. While practicing cultivation in a dream, he wasn't aware of what was happening outside. That would be a problem.

The one in purple clothes looked at Lin Feng unhappily and said, "Come with me."

Lin Feng followed the one in purple clothes. He didn't care about what the one in purple clothes thought about him. He needed to become stronger. He could become stronger in his dreams and nobody would know about it. That was the best way to hide the fact that he was becoming stronger. He could gain even more time that way.

The one in purple clothes brought Lin Feng to the celestial forest where they were last time. The others were gathered there too.

"This time, we're going to the buffer zone because we have things to do." said the one in purple clothes to Lin Feng. The others already knew about that because Lin Feng was the last one to

arrive.

“Let’s go.” the group then started flying and left the forest. After a short time, the one in purple clothes went into a tree and disappeared.

“That tree is the exit of our small world.”

Back then, the small world in which Yan Di had created had a tree as an exit, and then there was that tree in the Lovesickness Forest.

Lin Feng and the others went into the tree and appeared in the outside world. There was a tree behind them, it appeared so normal that it was hard to imagine that it led to a small world.

Qi Yu Chen was there too. He walked to Lin Feng and looked at him mockingly.

He looked amused because Mu Yun had betrayed him and afterwards, Lin Feng had become one of their slaves.

“Do you like Mu Yun?” asked Qi Yu Chen to Lin Feng indifferently.

“Be honest, you must listen to his orders.” said the one in purple clothes. Lin Feng nodded and then replied to Qi Yu Chen, “Indeed.”

Qi Yu Chen was convinced that Lin Feng liked Mu Yun, so Lin Feng had to say what Qi Yu Chen thought.

“You must look at my eyes when replying, and you should call me “Master.”” said Qi Yu Chen.

“Master, I like Mu Yun, indeed.” said Lin Feng bowing to Qi Yu Chen. When his head was lowered, Lin Feng looked extremely pissed off. Of course, it was just during the time that he lowered his head, when he raised his head again, he looked indifferent again.

Qi Yu Chen looked at Lin Feng and smiled happily. He really



enjoyed seeing Lin Feng submit to him like that.

“I’ll let you enjoy her beauty sometime then.” said Qi Yu Chen laughing. Then, he turned around and talked to himself, “Even though he’s in purple clothes, he’s only one of the Celestial Qi Castle’s slaves. Mu Yun, you’ll definitely regret your choices.”

“Let’s go.” said the leader of the group. Lin Feng had already seen him in the small world. It was a medium-level emperor.

The group rose up in the air and flew towards the buffer zone. Soon, the nine great celestial castles would start competing to gain control over the small worlds. The place where they were going to compete was at the buffer zone. The other castles were coming too.

When they arrived, Lin Feng noticed that there were even more people than the first time he had been there.

“Master, how are we going to compete to gain control over the small worlds?” asked Lin Feng to the one in purple. At the same time, they landed in a magnificent palace.

“A competition between the young people who are less than fifty years old. The three groups whose young people are the strongest gain control over the small worlds.” replied the emperor in purple clothes. Everybody knew that already. They couldn’t make the leaders fight because they didn’t want a great and tragic war. They didn’t want their leaders to lose face either. That’s why the rule had been determined a long time before. The Qing Di Mountain managed the event.

Lin Feng glanced at Qi Yu Chen and the people next to him. Those people seemed to be the core disciples of the Celestial Qi Castle. Those people didn’t seem like they were going to fight. It seemed like they were there to ensure that everything would happen without any problems.

“Lin Feng, you don’t need to worry about what Qi Yu Chen does, Master Mi thinks highly of you. Practice cultivation and become an

emperor, then follow Master Mi, and in the future, you'll have a higher social status than Qi Yu Chen in the Celestial Qi Castle." said the one in the purple clothes.

"Thank you very much, Master!" said Lin Feng politely. On the inside, he wasn't happy though. If he had really been controlled, even if he had broken through to the Huang Qi layer, it would have been useless. He didn't need to tell him he had to practice cultivation, Lin Feng already knew that. But his goal after becoming an emperor wasn't to serve Master Mi though, it was to kill him!

A short time after, someone welcomed the crowd. It was an emperor from the Celestial Qi Castle: Jin Chen Jun!

Jin Chen Jun walked to them, he glanced at Lin Feng and smiled at the emperor in purple clothes, "The person I brought to Master Mi isn't bad, right?"

"Thank you, Jin Chen Jun." said the one in purple clothes while smiling politely.

"Don't thank me, as long as Master Mi is satisfied, then I'm happy." said Jin Chen Jun smiling. He looked at Lin Feng and said, "I wouldn't have thought that you'd get purple clothes that quickly."

"Thank you, Jin Chen Jun!" said Lin Feng.

"Alright, everybody gather in front of me. First, you need to rest for a day." said Jin Chen Jun smiling. He then brought everybody to a hall where Lin Feng saw many beautiful women waiting.

"Lin Feng, those beautiful women are Priestesses, and they're all virgins. Each ten thousand years, when we compete to gain control over the small worlds, the Priestesses act as hostesses. Find a girl you like, and she'll be your escort." said the emperor in purple clothes. Lin Feng wasn't excited. He was furious.

He finally understood why Mu Yun was scared when she had

seen the knights at the gate. Priestesses had no freedom; their lives were in those people's hands. Usually, their lives weren't that sad but sometimes, they had to act as escorts.

“Is Mu Yun there or not?” thought Lin Feng glancing at the crowd, but he he didn't see her.

# Chapter 1543: Qing Di Mountain's Cultivators

---

That night, there were candles placed everywhere. Lin Feng was asleep and dreaming while cultivating.

The one in purple clothes rose up in the air and used his godly awareness to inspect Lin Feng's room. He wanted to see if Lin Feng was practicing cultivation, but a cold facial expression appeared on his face after he saw that Lin Feng was sleeping again. He was lying on his bed and snoring.

He was furious. He had told him a few times to practice cultivation, that he needed to break through to the Huang Qi layer, and that he'd be stronger than Qi Yu Shen someday.

On the second day, those who were controlled had to practice cultivation, but Lin Feng kept sleeping, however, the one in purple clothes didn't wake him up. He wanted to see how long Lin Feng would sleep.

But Lin Feng's ability to sleep surprised him because Lin Feng slept for ten days straight. Strong cultivators were gathering outside, but it seemed like the outside world had nothing to do with him.

On that day, the one in purple clothes couldn't let Lin Feng sleep any longer. He entered Lin Feng's room angrily.

"Wake him up!" said the emperor in purple clothes to a Priestess. The Priestess nodded and entered Lin Feng's room.

"Master!" shouted the Priestess, but Lin Feng didn't move. She was surprised, she grabbed his arm and shouted again, "Master!"

"Boom!" the Priestess was suddenly propelled away and crashed into a wall, breaking a piece of it off. Then she fell to the ground, her face was deathly pale, and she was bleeding from her mouth.

“What’s going on?” the emperor in purple clothes’ facial expression changed drastically. He walked over to the girl who said, “Master, I...”

When she had touched Lin Feng’s arm, she sensed a terrifying force assault her. If she had been a bit weaker, she would have died.

“I’m sorry, Master, I slept for a long time.” said Lin Feng stepping out of the room. “When I sleep, I’m not used to people touching my body.”

“It seems like I’ll have to be careful next time if I want to practice cultivation while sleeping.” thought Lin Feng. The emperor in purple clothes didn’t seem happy.

“You know that you slept for a long time then!?” said the emperor in purple clothes unhappily. “Only a few days are left before the start of the competition!”

“Roger, Master.” said Lin Feng nodding. Then, he left with the emperor. They left Jin Chen Jun’s palace and after a short time, they arrived at public square. It seemed to be made especially for battles. There were nine bleachers for people to watch battles from.

Apart from the seats on the bleachers, people could also stand on the edge to watch the battles.

At that moment, many people were there already. Those battles happened every ten thousand years, so of course people didn’t want to miss them.

“Just like the small world, people from the great world like to use battle stages.” thought Lin Feng glancing at the gigantic battle stages.

Lin Feng followed the emperor in purple clothes. Everybody else was already gathered together. Some people who were going to fight for the Celestial Qi Castle were there too. There was a

gigantic cauldron in the bleachers which was used to make sacrifices to their ancestors.

“They’ve been protecting the place for a few days already. I told you to practice cultivation, but in the end, you just slept. You’re wasting your talent and humiliating Master Mi who thinks so highly of you.” said the emperor in purple clothes, scolding Lin Feng.

“I’m sorry for my mistakes.” said Lin Feng calmly. He was amused on the inside though. Those people who controlled him hoped he’d become stronger. However, if he became stronger, then he might be doomed.

“Alright, we’re staying here these days. Maybe some incredible people will come, so don’t talk carelessly. Your life belongs to the Celestial Qi Castle, so you can’t go and cause trouble. Of course, if someone comes and causes trouble, just listen to my orders.” said the emperor in purple clothes. He seemed a bit worried about Lin Feng. He had been sleeping the whole time. If Lin Feng continued sleeping the whole time, he’d only have himself to blame after they gave up on him.

“Roger, Master.” said Lin Feng. Then, he went to the bleachers and sat down cross-legged. He immediately started dreaming again.

“Eh...” the emperor in purple clothes was astonished. He didn’t understand, was Lin Feng practicing cultivation or sleeping?

Was he hiding something? Lin Feng had no Qi at that moment and he looked like he was sleeping.

“Forget it, he can do whatever he wants these days. After some time, I’ll check his cultivation and I’ll know if he was practicing or not.” thought the emperor in purple clothes. Then, he ignored Lin Feng.

At that moment, on the side of the Celestial Qi Castle, the

emperor in purple clothes looked grave and solemn. He gazed into the distance as some people were approaching. They all looked like princes: confident, at ease and extraordinary.

“Lin Feng, get up!” said a voice in Lin Feng’s brain. He opened his eyes and saw all the members of the Celestial Qi Castle gazing into the distance.

Lin Feng looked at them, and they looked extraordinary indeed. They seemed like they were one with the Earth and sky. They looked to only be about thirty years old, but they were all emperors.

Of course, Lin Feng knew that they were probably older.

“Welcome, incredible people from the Qing Di Mountain!” said the emperor in purple clothes and Jin Chen Jun while bowing politely before those people. Lin Feng and the others also bowed before them.

“Qing Di Mountain’s cultivators!” thought Lin Feng. Those young people were all cultivators from the Qing Di Mountain. No wonder the emperor in purple clothes and Jin Chen Jun were acting so polite.

“That’s little Yu Chen, right?” said one of the young men who was smiling at Qi Yu Chen.

“Uncle Yun Sheng, that’s me!” said Qi Yu Chen smiling at Qi Yun Sheng. His eyes were filled with cold lights. Yun Sheng was his uncle and he had become a cultivator of Qing Di Mountain. In the future, he’d become one of the leaders of Celestial Qi Castle.

“Not bad. This time, there will be a great cultivator representing Qing Di Mountain and many others from the Qing Di Mountain. Show us how strong you are and maybe you’ll become a cultivator of Qing Di Mountain as well. A small fish will join dragons!” said Qi Yun Sheng tapping Qi Yu Chen’s shoulder. Then, he looked at the other cultivators from the Qi Clan and said, “Make great efforts

to show us how strong you are. Even though many of you don't have the family name "Qi", in the Celestial Qi Castle, you are part of their family. Besides, the Qing Di Mountain doesn't care about your family name, only strength and talent matter to them."

"Roger, Master." said everybody bowing.



# Chapter 1544: Emperor Shen Yu

---

Shortly after that, all the cultivators from Qing Di Mountain arrived. Those who arrived with Qi Yun Shen were those with whom he had made friends with in the Qing Di Mountain. Young people who became part of the Qing Di Mountain were not only talented, but lucky as well.

People from the other nine great celestial castles also arrived. Besides, amongst the people from the Qing Di Mountain, many of them were from the nine great celestial castles. However, few of them had a very high social status in Qing Di Mountain.

The nine great celestial castles were composed of: The Celestial Qi Castle, the Celestial Si Kong Castle, the Celestial Wen Castle, the Ancient Celestial Castle, the Celestial Summer Castle, the Palace of Medicinal Kings, the Celestial Palace of Punishing Thunders, the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, and the Celestial Transformation Palace.

The nine great celestial castles were all situated on Qing Di Mountain's territories.

"Yu Chen, more strong cultivators from the Qing Di Mountain will arrive soon. You'll come with me to meet them, and when the time comes, you'll show them how strong you are." said Qi Yun Sheng to Qi Yu Chen. Qi Yu Chen looked happy suddenly. He bowed and said, "Thank you very much, Uncle!"

Lin Feng was standing next to the stage. He glanced at the crowd and thought, "The nine great celestial castles are not the only actors, the Qing Di Mountain also plays a role. Besides the competition, the nine great celestial castles will also seek opportunities to send their own disciples to the Qing Di Mountain."

There were people everywhere. Lin Feng saw many people he knew. On the side of the Celestial Si Kong Castle, he saw Si Kong

Zhang Ming; on the side of the Ancient Celestial Castle, he saw Gu Li, on the side of the Celestial Summer Castle, he saw the extraordinary Xia Tian Fan, on the side of the Celestial Palace of Punishing Thunders, he saw the Messenger, on the side of the Celestial transformation Palace, he saw Qiao Chi Feng, on the side of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, he saw Zhou Tian Ruo and Zhou Tian Xiao.

Those people were all young cultivators from the nine great celestial castles. That's why they had gone to the small world to practice cultivation. It made sense now that they weren't all good friends while in Ba Huang, if there were conflicts between their elders, there were conflicts between them too.

Lin Feng looked at the Celestial Si Kong Castle, but he didn't see anyone he knew.

Lin Feng saw Emperor Yu, but he looked like an ordinary person. He was looking at the Celestial Qi Castle's people. When he saw Lin Feng, he looked incredibly sad. He also noticed Ban Ruo, Li Hen, Xing Zhan and Yuan Fei. They all looked empty as they stood on the Celestial Qi Castle's side.

"It's all my fault." thought Emperor Yu. His heart hurt as he felt guilty, especially for Lin Feng. Lin Feng wanted to protect him because he was injured.

A short time after, some clouds rolled in the sky and a group of people appeared. The leader of the group looked incredible. He was riding a blue-green lotus and two strong cultivators were standing behind him.

"Emperor Ni Chen is here!" One of those people was a strong cultivator from the Qing Di Mountain: Emperor Ni Chen.

All the strong cultivators from the nine great celestial castles and Qing Di Mountain stood up for Emperor Ni Chen.

"I've heard that Emperor Ni Chen is now a high-level emperor,

which means that his strength is unfathomable. He has a very high social status in Qing Di Mountain.” said someone in the crowd to someone else.

“Who are those people next to Emperor Ni Chen? Incredible cultivators from Qing Di Mountain?” thought some people in the crowd. One of them was wearing black clothes and looked enigmatic. He was just smiling at everyone. People couldn’t ignore him even if he wasn’t next to Emperor Ni Chen.

Besides, he was sitting next to Emperor Ni Chen which meant he was probably almost as strong as Emperor Ni Chen. They just didn’t know if he was from Qing Di Mountain.

“Yu Chen, come with me.” said Qi Yun Sheng at that moment, rising in the air. They flew towards the newcomers in the center.

Qi Yun Sheng and Qi Yu Chen were not the only ones, the other cultivators from the nine great celestial castles who were cultivators from Qing Di Mountain also rose into the air and flew towards Emperor Ni Chen.

“Welcome, Master!” said the crowd bowing politely. In the Qing Di Mountain, Emperor Ni Chen was high in the hierarchy.

“No need to exaggerate yourselves.” said Emperor Ni Chen smiling naturally.

“Emperor Ni Chen, Ao Feng is your follower, is he being obedient?” asked one of the emperors from the Celestial Wen Castle to Emperor Ni Chen smiling. The crowd looked furious because Emperor Ni Chen thought highly of Wen Ao Feng and had taken him as a disciple. The Celestial Wen Castle was gaining more and more influence recently.

“Ao Feng is very talented. A bright future awaits him, I’m sure.” said Emperor Ni Chen smiling.

“Thank you, Master, I won’t worry then.” said that emperor bowing. He smiled at Wen Ao Feng behind him and said, “Ao Feng,

how come you haven't invited Emperor Ni Chen to come to the Celestial Wen Castle yet!"

Ao Feng came closer and said, "Teacher, please do!"

"Alright." said Emperor Ni Chen smiling. Then, he looked at the one in black clothes and said, "Emperor Shen Yu, please!"

The person in black clothes remained silent and followed Emperor Ni Chen. They flew in the direction of the people from the Celestial Wen Castle. Nobody else even had the opportunity to say anything.

"Who's Emperor Shen Yu?" thought the crowd. Emperor Ni Chen was extremely polite to him, so just what was his social status?

Qi Yun Sheng went back to Celestial Qi Castle and said to Qi Yu Chen, "Did you see that? The Celestial Wen Castle has Wen Ao Feng. The Celestial Wen Castle has a different position within the Qing Di Mountain nowadays, don't miss that opportunity and do your best to be noticed by Emperor Ni Chen."

Of course, Emperor Ni Chen and Emperor Shen Yu didn't forget about their responsibilities. Emperor Ni Chen smiled and said, "Emperor Shen Yu, what do you think about my young people?"

Emperor Shen Yu's eyes were twinkling. He glanced at the young people, and when he looked at the people from the Celestial Qi Castle, he was surprised. He had found what he was looking for, so he said, "Not bad!" Emperor Ni Chen was surprised, Emperor Shen Yu hadn't smiled until now.

At that moment, on the side of Celestial Qi Castle, Lin Feng shivered. Had he sensed that someone was looking at him?

## Chapter 1545: Insane and Arrogant

---

The atmosphere eventually calmed down. Then Qi Yun Xiao said, “It’s about time. Let’s perform the sacrifice to our ancestors.”

“Roger, Master.” said the one next to him nodding. Then, he went to the Celestial Qi Castle’s cauldron and a sound resonated. The women who walked out had incredible figures, especially the ones who were wearing traditional qipao.

On the side of the Celestial Qi Castle, it was a beautiful Priestess, she was very white and looked stunning.

“All the Priestesses of the different castles appeared.” thought the crowd. The Priestess from the Celestial Qi Castle looked stunning, she looked even more attractive because she had a mask on her face.

Lin Feng looked indifferently at that Priestess dancing in front of the cauldron. The fact that she was wearing a mask made her even more desirable.

“She’s beautiful, right?” said a voice in Lin Feng’s head. It was Qi Yu Chen using telepathy. Lin Feng frowned and remembered what Qi Yu Chen had said, he would show him her beauty later. Did that mean that... Lin Feng was suddenly furious. He looked at all the Priestesses and then looked at the Priestess from the Celestial Qi Castle again: beautiful body, beautiful long white legs...

“It’s Yun!” thought Lin Feng. She had been chosen to be the ancestors’ Priestess.

Finally, three sounds resonated and the members from the Qi Clan stood up. All the Priestesses moved back and stood in front of the bleachers.

“Take off your masks.” said Qi Yu Chen. The girls took off their masks one after the other. The leader of the group was Mu Yun.

Mu Yun looked at Lin Feng. She thought Lin Feng was like her,

that he had lost his freedom.

“Uncle, Masters, I chose those girls myself. Do you like them?” asked Qi Yu Chen calmly. Sex wasn’t something common in the world of cultivation. People usually spent time practicing cultivation, however, once in a while, cultivators enjoyed some carnal pleasures.

Qi Yun Sheng thought those girls weren’t bad, indeed. The strong cultivators next to him looked satisfied too. Qi Yun Sheng looked at Mu Yun and asked, “What’s your name?”

“Uncle, that girl’s name is Mu Yun.”

“Alright, I like her.” said Qi Yun Sheng.

Mu Yun grinded her teeth, her face was deathly pale. Then Qi Yu Chen smiled at Mu Yun in a cold way. She couldn’t refuse after he had chosen her. She would be his toy now, only existing to make him happy.

However, Lin Feng turned around and said to Qi Yun Sheng, “Master, I’d like to say something.”

“Oh?” Qi Yun Sheng looked at Lin Feng. He was from the Celestial Qi Castle, and he was wearing purple clothes, which meant that he was a talented cultivator from a small world.

“Lin Feng!” said the emperor in purple clothes. What was going on with Lin Feng?

“Master, I’d like to say something for the Master from the Qing Di Mountain so that he won’t get angry.” said Lin Feng to the emperor in purple clothes. Then, he looked at Qi Yun Sheng and said, “Master, before serving the Celestial Qi Castle, I used to hide in a small tribe in the desert. She protected me from the Celestial Qi Castle. I lived in her tribe for some time and actually had sex with her. Back then, Qi Yu Chen liked her, so he got upset after learning about her betrayal, and forced her to attend.”

Qi Yun Sheng frowned, he looked furious. If that was true, it

meant that Mu Yun wasn't a virgin and that Qi Yun Sheng was fooling him.

Qi Yu Chen was suddenly covered with a cold sweat. His eyes were filled with cold lights. He was fixedly staring at Lin Feng and Mu Yun, "Did you really have sex?"

"I lived with her for a while, so of course we did." said Lin Feng calmly. Mu Yun looked at Lin Feng with surprise. Lin Feng wasn't being controlled!

"Indeed, I wouldn't want to lie to you." said Mu Yun bowing before Qi Yun Sheng.

"Uncle, I didn't know she was a slut who dared violate Celestial Qi Castle's rules!" pleaded Qi Yu Chen.

"It's alright, it's alright, just let her go." said Qi Yun Sheng. He didn't mind such a small thing.

"Mu Yun, you just wait to see what will happen to you!" said Qi Yu Chen coldly. Lin Feng talked again, "Master!"

The emperor in purple clothes frowned. Lin Feng was acting strange.

"Master, since she's my woman, please give her to me." said Lin Feng to the emperor in purple clothes. The emperor in purple clothes frowned, he was speechless. He didn't know what to do. Lin Feng was in their control, and Master Mi also thought highly of him. Qi Yu Chen had the blood of the Qi Clan, but his social status wasn't as high as the purple-clothed emperor's.

"Dream on! She'll be punished! She violated rules after all!" yelled Qi Yu Chen. After saying that, he sensed a terrifying death Qi surround his body.

"Tap..." Lin Feng slowly walked towards Qi Yu Chen. The ground started shaking and Qi Yu Chen's heart started racing.

"Lin Feng!" shouted the emperor in purple clothes. What was

going on with Lin Feng? He had been sleeping the whole time and now he wanted to attack Qi Yu Chen.

“Master, I listened to Master Mi’s orders, but he never told me to listen to Qi Yu Chen. I respect him, but this time he humiliated him and humiliated my woman, what else should I do?” said Lin Feng as he continued to walk towards Qi Yu Chen while releasing energies. Qi Yu Chen frowned, he didn’t understand what was wrong with Lin Feng?

Even though he was furious, Lin Feng was extremely strong, he felt like he was suffocating.

Qi Yun Sheng seemed excited. Lin Feng had only broken through to the seventh Zun Qi layer and his force was multiplied by seven-hundred already, not bad.

“Boom boom!” the bleachers shook violently as gigantic waves of energies crashed onto Qi Yu Chen. Lin Feng was releasing death energies which were draining out his life. He took a few steps back and looked distraught.

“That’s enough! Don’t ridicule the Celestial Qi Castle in front of everyone.” said Qi Yun Sheng indifferently. Lin Feng recalled his Qi, but he was still looking at him in a cold way as he said, “Who the fuck do you think you are? In the future, you better respect me. If you’re unhappy, go and see Master Mi to complain!”

He didn’t give him any face and even humiliated him. He served the Celestial Qi Castle and Master Mi, so he had to find any excuse to get angry, for example, a woman.

“Who the fuck do you think you are?” Lin Feng’s voice and swear words echoed in his head.



## Chapter 1546: Part of the Audience

---

Qi Yu Chen looked furious and released Qi, but then he heard Qi Yun Sheng say, “That’s enough! Yu Chen, do what you have to do.”

Qi Yu Chen looked upset, but he nodded and recalled his Qi. He was still looking at Lin Feng in a cold way as he said, “Lin Feng, I will show you just who I am!”

Lin Feng ignored him. Then Qi Yun Xiao said, “That girl is Lin Feng’s so give her to him. Then make the others go. Yu Chen, get ready to enter the battle stage.”

“Roger!”

“Thank you, Master!” said Qi Yu Chen and Lin Feng at the same time. Mu Yun smiled indifferently. Lin Feng had saved her.

Mu Yun and the other Priestesses moved away. Qi Yu Chen was furious though, and he didn’t plan on to let them off that easily.

“Next time, you better not cause trouble.” said the emperor in purple clothes. That was the competition for the small worlds, there were millions of people watching them. Some extraordinary cultivators were there and Lin Feng surprisingly dared cause trouble. Luckily, Lin Feng was strong, for if he had been weak, he would have died on spot.

Qi Yun Xiao only gave Mu Yun to Lin Feng to give Master Mi face. He had had no choice but give her to Lin Feng because she wasn’t a virgin, otherwise Qi Yun Sheng could have her if he wanted.

That confrontation had drawn many people’s attention, but it didn’t last not for long..

At that moment, a strong cultivator from the Celestial Wen Castle, who oversaw the event, stood up and waved at the crowd. Everybody remained silent and waited for him to talk.

Many people were upset with him. The Celestial Wen Castle had

asked Emperor Ni Chen to sit with them. How arrogant was that?!

“Everybody, I don’t need to say much because you already know the rules, they’re always the same each time around.” The strong cultivator from the Celestial Wen Castle turned to Emperor Ni Chen and smiled, “Emperor Ni Chen, shall we start?”

“Don’t worry about me. Just do as you wish.” said Emperor Ni Chen smiling indifferently. The strong cultivator from the Celestial Wen Castle nodded and said, “The nine great celestial castles will each choose nine people, then a total of eighty-one people will get on the stage.”

Instantly, some young people walked towards the battling stages. On the side of the Celestial Qi Castle, Qi Yu Chen and the others ran towards the battle stage. For them, that day was extremely important, it would determine who’d control the small worlds and they might attract Qing Di Mountain’s attention, possibly recruiting them.

“Emperor Ni Chen, would you like to preside over the event?” asked the cultivator from Celestial Wen Castle to Emperor Ni Chen. The competition was fair, each person had to fight against every fighter from the eight other celestial castles. From there, the first eighteen cultivators would be selected and the ranking would be made made: the first cultivator had eighteen points, the second one seventeen, ..., the eighteenth would have one point. In the end, the three groups which had the most points gained control over the small worlds for the next ten thousand years.

They only took eighteen people because they wanted to consider the strongest cultivators only.

At that moment, everybody was thinking that Emperor Ni Chen’s disciple, Wen Ao Feng, would get the eighteen points and finish first. But the others could also get ranked.

“You go.” said Emperor Ni Chen to someone next to him. He didn’t want to preside over the event. That person nodded and

flew to the center.

It didn't matter who did it, those battles were going to be very fair and the ranking would be straightforward.

“Many of those strong young people had been practicing cultivation a little bit everywhere. Some of them even went to the small worlds. I wonder how strong they've become.” thought the crowd.

Lin Feng looked at them. Back then, in the small world, he had participated in a few competitions. This time Lin Feng could only watch.

It was a good opportunity for him to see how strong the cultivators were. Most of them were cultivators of the eighth or ninth Zun Qi layer. Cultivators of the seventh Zun Qi layer were common.

After a short time, the battle started. The first battle was between the Celestial Wen Castle and the Celestial Qi Castle. Even though they could surrender as they wished, none of them were willing to.

Finally, the one from the Celestial Wen Castle won the battle, but he was injured.

“They're both cultivators of the eighth Zun Qi layer, but they can easily defeat cultivators of the ninth Zun Qi layer.” thought Lin Feng. The nine young people who had been chosen by their respective celestial castles were amazingly strong.

Of course, if those two cultivators wanted to finish in the top eighteen, it'd be difficult. Those Lin Feng had seen in the small world, such as Zhou Tian Ruo, Gu Li, and Qiao Chi Feng were much stronger than those two.

The second battle was Zhou Tian Ruo against a cultivator of the ninth Zun Qi layer. Zhou Tian Ruo released golden holy Qi which lacerated the sky. As expected, Zhou Tian Ruo had become stronger since the last time Lin Feng had seen him.

As the battles went on, the crowd grew more and more surprised.

Each one had to fight against all the cultivators from all the other groups, which meant that if they didn't die, each person had to fight seventy-three times. Therefore, the battles were going to last a while.

Lin Feng observed the battles very seriously. Many of the people who were fighting weren't as strong as the geniuses from Ba Huang. After all, the strongest geniuses of Ba Huang Province were rare birds. If the strong geniuses from the Ba Huang Province fought on the battle stage, they would have probably amazed a lot of people.

Of course, amongst those fighters, there were also people who were talented, such as Wen Ao Feng. He had fought against a cultivator of the ninth Zun Qi layer, and when their fists collided, his enemy had been crushed to death. That cultivator was from the Celestial Si Kong Castle. Although it upset them to lose their fighter, they couldn't do much about it.

More than a hundred battles took place and it then grew dark outside. The strong cultivator from the Celestial Wen Castle looked at Emperor Ni Chen and said, "Master, should we have a rest? The battles can continue tomorrow."

"Alright." said Emperor Ni Chen nodding. Even though darkness didn't affect cultivators, having a rest was a good opportunity for the young cultivators from Qing Di Mountain and the nine great celestial castles to make friends.

Then the strong cultivator from the Celestial Wen Castle nodded and interrupted the battles.

# Chapter 1547: Rescue

---

“Let’s go back.” said Qi Yun Sheng. They hadn’t done that bad for the first day, but Qi Yun Sheng still wasn’t happy. The Celestial Wen Castle had the best results during the first day. Wen Ao Feng wasn’t the only strong cultivator from Celestial Wen Castle. They had two other cultivators who had the potential to earn the eighteen points.

Wen Ao Feng’s ranking was already quite high, so if the three cultivators from Celestial Wen Castle continued doing so well, they’d rank at the top of the eighteen.

The group from Celestial Qi Castle left the bleachers and the others also dispersed. Many people couldn’t wait to see the remaining battles.

All of that had nothing to do with Lin Feng though. He followed the group of people from Celestial Qi Castle and found Mu Yun waiting aside.

Qi Yu Chen looked at Mu Yun in a cold way and said, “What are you doing here?”

“Master already gave Yun to me.” said Lin Feng, stopping in front of Qi Yu Chen.

Qi Yu Chen rolled up his sleeves and left ignoring them.

“Yun, let’s go.” said Lin Feng. They didn’t say anything after they left. They immediately went back to Celestial Qi Castle and Lin Feng brought her inside his room.

“Lin Feng, you...” said Mu Yun looking at Lin Feng with her beautiful eyes while using telepathy. She wanted to be sure.

“Indeed.” replied Lin Feng nodding. Mu Yun smiled thinly. How had he done that?

“Yun, you can sleep on my bed, and you can stay with me for a

while.” said Lin Feng. He was now enemies with Qi Yu Chen, and he wouldn’t let Lin Feng and Mu Yun off that easily. Yun wasn’t that strong, so if Qi Yu Chen wanted to do anything to her, she wouldn’t stand a chance without Lin Feng.

Lin Feng thought of making Yun hide inside the Jade Emperor’s palace, but his social status was special. He was supposed to be controlled. If Yun disappeared, they would think that he possessed a special item.

Mu Yun blushed. Even though Lin Feng said they had had sex, it was just to protect her. Now, they were in the same room and Lin Feng wanted her to sleep on his bed. She felt very shy but she nodded and lied down.

Lin Feng sat down in front of the bed. Mu Yun was a nice and kindhearted girl, Lin Feng was wondering how he could save her.

Strength, strength, always more strength! Lin Feng decided to dream again and practice cultivation there. He had to become stronger.

The night was calm and peaceful. Sometime during that quiet night, a dark silhouette appeared, and nobody noticed them.

“Not bad, but since they’re controlled, I can’t make those people talk.” thought the dark silhouette. However, he was surprised to see some people in the courtyard.

“Eh?” the dark shadow frowned. Qi Yu Chen and Jin Chen Jun were laughing and walking. They soon left the courtyard.

After they left, the silhouette entered silently and walked in the direction of Lin Feng’s room.

Qi Yu Chen turned around and laughed. Lin Feng had dared humiliate him, so now he would make Lin Feng understand what it meant to have the blood of the Qi’s. Mu Yun was going to regret it too.

The dark shadow crouched down, not far from Lin Feng’s room.

Then they saw someone stop outside Lin Feng's room and release some cosmic energy.

"Dream cosmic energy?" the dark shadow looked amused. The person they saw was a dream cultivator.

"Eh?" At that moment, the shadow was surprised. Something was crawling towards Lin Feng's room as well.

"Interesting." thought the shadow laughing in a low voice. That night was going to be interesting.

"Dream of Life!" said someone outside of Lin Feng's room. Dream cosmic energy penetrated Lin Feng's room, and it was both silent and invisible.

The one who was moving stealthily opened Lin Feng's door and saw Lin Feng, he was seated and looked relaxed. That person smiled coldly. They had sent him to deal with a cultivator of the seventh Zun Qi layer, but they had overestimated Lin Feng. Of course, Qi Yu Chen just wanted someone who could remain silent and invisible. The assassin he had sent could make Lin Feng fall asleep and then kill him effortlessly!

"Sleep forever!" said the cultivator crawling. However, at that moment, he was surprised.

"Kaboom!" a terrifying strength immediately pierced his chest. Then a hand grabbed Lin Feng and pulled him to the ground.

The dream cultivator was stupefied, it was an emperor who knew Earth cosmic energy!

The Emperor using Earth energy quickly glanced at Mu Yun and then left. Such great things were happening, and very quickly, the Celestial Qi Castle's strong cultivators would rush over soon.

As expected, after he left, many strong cultivators appeared in Lin Feng's room to find him missing.

The emperor in purple clothes looked furious. Lin Feng had been

kidnapped in their own territory. Who had the balls to do that?

Qi Yun Xiao frowned and shouted, “Qi Yu Chen, come here!”

Qi Yun Sheng left, he didn’t continue chasing the dream cultivator. Instead, he chased the Earth Qi. He followed them outside but frowned because the Qi stopped there.

At that moment, Emperor Yu and Lin Feng appeared in the distance. No matter what, he wanted to rescue Lin Feng. He didn’t care whether Lin Feng was controlled or not, he’d figure out what to do afterwards.

Emperor Yu had managed to rescue Lin Feng; however, he didn’t understand why Lin Feng was still sleeping.



# Chapter 1548: Humiliation

---

“Lin Feng!” shouted Emperor Yu. However, Lin Feng didn’t react. Emperor Yu frowned and shook Lin Feng but it was useless.

Emperor Yu was concerned now. Lin Feng was breathing normally, and he wasn’t injured, but he was sleeping. What could be going on?

Emperor Yu didn’t know that a shadow was following him as he flew away. That shadow was completely invisible, and even though Emperor Yu was a strong emperor, he still couldn’t sense that person’s presence at all.

It gradually became clear outside. Then the second day battles continued. The battles were extremely intense as the cultivators were fighting even stronger than they had the first day.

The emperor in purple clothes thought that Lin Feng’s disappearance had something to do with Qi Yu Chen. However, he couldn’t accuse him right now. After all, Qi Yu Chen had the blood of the Qi Clan. He would just inform Master Mi of the situation.

Lin Feng was still asleep, and Emperor Yu was really in a rush to find a healer. They were between the nine great celestial castles, there had to be a solution: The Palace of Medicinal Kings.

The battles of the second day ended and people left again. A silhouette came to the people of the Palace of Medicinal Kings carrying someone on his back. It was Lin Feng.

“Master, I need to see the elders of the Palace of Medicinal Kings.” said Emperor Yu.

One of them frowned and said to Emperor Yu coldly, “Who are you? And what do you want from us?”

“I need to see an elder to save someone.” said Emperor Yu calmly. That young man looked at him in a cold way and said indifferently, “We don’t heal strangers. Leave now.”

Emperor Yu didn't flinch, he continued walking towards them.

The people from the Palace of Medicinal Kings looked at him in a cold way and said, "Piss off now! Didn't you hear!"

Emperor Yu didn't stop, he continued moving forwards, even faster. After they watched him run ahead, ignoring their threat, those people started chasing him.

Emperor Yu arrived outside of a door and released his godly awareness to inspect the area. He found a very strong cultivator inside.

"Master, please help me save someone." said Emperor Yu bowing at the entrance of the room. He knew that it was impolite, but he had no choice. He would do anything to save Lin Feng.

Someone opened the door, it was an old man with white beard. His eyes were twinkling with cold lights.

"You're audacious!" said the old man in a cold way, glancing at Emperor Yu and Lin Feng. Surprisingly, that person had dared inspect his room.

"Kneel down!" Emperor Yu pulled a long face but still knelt down, "Master, please forgive me, I really need you to heal someone."

Emperor Yu took out a ring and gave it to the old man.

The old man inspected the ring and said to Emperor Yu harshly, "You're insolent and impolite, I'll keep that ring to punish you! Piss off now!"

Emperor Yu suddenly raised his head and shouted, "Master!"

"Piss off!" shouted the old man, now releasing terrifyingly oppressive energies.

"Good bye!" The ground shook under Emperor Yu's knees, exploding and throwing Emperor Yu and Lin Feng away. Emperor Yu was even further depressed. How could he solve Lin Feng's

problem? If the cultivators at the Palace of Medicinal Kings wouldn't help, who would?

Emperor Yu left.

At that moment, the shadow continued following him and sighed, "He really attaches a lot of importance to that person. I wonder who he is to him."

The shadow landed in front of Emperor Yu as they were leaving.

Emperor Yu suddenly saw a person in black clothes arrive in front of him. He was shocked because he hadn't sensed that person's presence before he approached.

"Hand him over to me." said the person in black clothes to Emperor Yu indifferently. Would Emperor Yu do such a thing though?

"There's a pill here, it can heal you." said the person in black clothes, giving Emperor Yu a pill.

Emperor Yu was skeptical but accepted the pill. Without hesitating, he put it into his mouth. He knew that person was very strong, so if they wanted to kill him, they wouldn't have to resort to poison.

Emperor Yu turned red after taking that pill and his body started changing. He was pleasantly surprised.

"Now, hand him over." said that person who was now smiling at Emperor Yu.

"I hope you can save him." Emperor Yu looked touched and didn't hesitate any longer. He quickly handed Lin Feng over to him.

"Don't worry." said that person to Emperor Yu before he disappeared.

Emperor Yu was dumbstruck. What could he do now?

“I wonder who that person is?” whispered Emperor Yu.

In the following days, the battles continued at the main square.

People were surprised because Emperor Shen Yu hadn't appeared for a few days now.

Somewhere inside the buffer zone, in a small room, Lin Feng opened his eyes and stood up. There was a person in black clothes standing in front of him.

“Emperor Shen Yu!” Lin Feng was incredulous. Why was he with Emperor Shen Yu?

“Look what happened these days.” said Emperor Shen Yu as he smiled at Lin Feng. He released his godly awareness and merged it into Lin Feng's third eye. Suddenly, Lin Feng saw everything that had happened. He examined the memories and saw that someone had plotted against him.

“Boom!” Terrifying lights appeared in Lin Feng's eyes as well as Qi. Someone had humiliated his teacher. That old man had made him kneel and had stolen a treasure from him before telling him to piss off!

Lin Feng recalled his Qi and bowed before Emperor Shen Yu, “Thank you very much, Master, for having saved my teacher!

## Chapter 1549: On the Battle Stage

---

Lin Feng remembered back to when Emperor Ni Chen and Emperor Shen Yu had shown up, Emperor Shen Yu had looked at him particularly. The problem was that he didn't know Emperor Shen Yu, why had he paid him so much attention? He also knew everything that had happened to him so far, which meant he had been following him.

Besides, Emperor Shen Yu had given his teacher a pill, of which the price was probably terrifying, He even gave it to Emperor Yu without hesitation. Lin Feng was skeptical about it all.

"The Celestial Qi Castle doesn't control you?" asked Emperor Shen Yu. He was curious.

Lin Feng remained silent for a few seconds, but he finally nodded, "Indeed, they didn't manage to control me."

"Haha, not bad. Master Mi didn't manage to control you, that's rare." said Emperor Shen Yu laughing before adding, "Things will be easier that way."

"Lin Feng, you've been sleeping for a few days. The battles between the nine great celestial castles are almost over. Let's go back and watch." said Emperor Shen Yu positively. Lin Feng didn't understand, Emperor Shen Yu had saved him and now he wanted him to go back?

"Master, I'm now away from the Celestial Qi Castle, if I went back, wouldn't I have to give myself back to them? That seems very stupid." replied Lin Feng straightforwardly.

Emperor Shen Yu laughed and said, "It's normal that you want to leave, but don't you want to try and fight on the battle stage?"

"Fight on the battle stage!?" Lin Feng repeated back in shock.

"We don't have much time, so let's go." said Emperor Shen Yu smiling. Then, he took Lin Feng and left.

It was nearing the end of the battles. The young people from Celestial Wen Castle were turning out to be the strongest ones. Wen Ao Feng was probably going to rank first. Apart from him, his two friends were also going to rank in the top eighteen. The Celestial Wen Castle was probably going to rule over the small worlds in the following ten thousand years.

Apart from the Celestial Wen Castle, the Palace of Medicinal Kings also did well. Most of their cultivators were cultivators at the top of the Zun Qi layer. Therefore, the Palace of Medicinal Kings had four cultivators in the top eighteen so far.

Concerning the third group, it would probably be the Celestial Palace of Punishing Thunders or the Celestial Qi Castle. The remaining battles would determine that.

On Celestial Qi Castle's side, a person walked to the bleachers: It was Lin Feng.

The emperor in purple clothes sensed something amiss and looked at Lin Feng. He was surprised, but it was a pleasant surprise. "Lin Feng, where did you go?"

"Master, someone wanted to kill me, after that, someone attacked him. I was injured so I needed to hide and heal." replied Lin Feng. The emperor in purple clothes nodded, he believed Lin Feng. He had sensed two emperors' Qi in Lin Feng's room that night.

"Good to see you're alright!" said the emperor in purple clothes. Lin Feng was safe and sound, so he was obviously happy. He didn't think about it too much.

After that, Lin Feng turned towards the battle stage. Initially, there were eighty-one battle stages, but now only fifty were left. Many people had died or were injured.

Lin Feng saw that a cultivator from the Palace of Medicinal Kings was fighting. He had seen him before in Ba Huang, when he had

provoked Zhou Tian Ruo. He was very strong. He had just defeated a cultivator from the Ancient Celestial Castle.

But because of what had happened to Emperor Yu, Lin Feng was looking at the people from the Palace of Medicinal Kings in a cold way, especially the old man in the middle of the crowd. That was the one he had seen in Emperor Shen Yu's memories, the one who had taken Emperor Yu's ring and told him to piss off.

Lin Feng looked furious. That old man sensed that Lin Feng was glaring at him, so he turned his head. He was surprised. That young man was unconscious when he had seen him last time, and an emperor had asked him to heal him. Now, he was cured. Surprisingly, that someone was from the Celestial Qi Castle.

Afterwards, Lin Feng looked back at the battle stages again. The strong cultivators from the great world were extremely strong. Xia Tian Fan had broken through to the eighth Zun Qi layer, while Qiao Chi Feng and Zhou Tian Ruo had also become stronger since he had last seen them.

Lin Feng looked at Wen Ao Feng again. He was fast and cruel, his attacks were explosive, causing his opponents to either die or leaving them heavily injured.

Emperor Ni Chen, who was on the side of the Celestial Wen Castle, walked out and smiled, "Brother Shen Yu, how come I didn't see you the last few days?"

"I had some things to do. It was a crucial moment for me, luckily, I didn't miss it." said Emperor Shen Yu, seemingly in a good mood. What was going on with him? Emperor Ni Chen hadn't seen him in such a good mood since they had arrived.

"Brother Shen Yu, what do you think of these young men? I want to take some to Qing Di Mountain. Only one or two of them can go with you." said Emperor Ni Chen smiling.

"There's no need, none of them can go to the Qing Di Mountain."

said Emperor Shen Yu indifferently. Then he continued watching the battles.

“After that battle, Ao Feng will become the champion.” thought Emperor Ni Chen. The last battle was Wen Ao Feng against a strong cultivator from the Celestial Palace of Punishing Thunders. That strong cultivator hadn’t won a single fight while Wen Ao Feng had won every one of his fights, so Wen Ao Feng was expected to win.

Wen Ao Feng and that strong cultivator from the Celestial Palace of Punishing Thunders fought. Thunder and empty space energies collided causing an explosion in the sky. Abstruse energies assaulted the battle stage, making it shake violently.

“Abstruse energies of the highest levels.” the crowd was incredulous. Wen Ao Feng’s force was multiplied by seven-hundred and his abstruse energies were at the highest level. It wouldn’t be long before he become an emperor.

Finally, Wen Ao Feng won the battle. He was the champion!

“Not bad!” Emperor Ni Chen stood up and smiled. He was proud. Although he hadn’t taught Wen Ao Feng for that long, he was still proud of his disciple. Not one of the disciples from the nine great celestial castles could compete with him anymore.

The cultivators of the Celestial Wen Castle also stood up and applauded him. Emperor Ni Chen was satisfied, and Celestial Wen Castle was as well.

“Alright, we can start the rankings.” said Emperor Ni Chen. At that moment, the referees started counting the points. Wen Ao Feng ranked first, the second one was from the Palace of Medicinal Kings: He was a humble young man. The third one was one of the cultivators who had lost against Wen Ao Feng, the fourth one was Gu Li, the fifth one Qi Yu Chen, the sixth one was someone from the Celestial Wen Castle, then Qiao Chi Feng, Zhou Tian Ruo and Xia Tian Fan.



“Not bad, amongst you eighteen geniuses, does anyone want to join Qing Di Mountain?” asked Emperor Ni Chen joyfully. Many of them looked extremely happy. Emperor Ni Chen was inviting them personally. Apart from Wen Ao Feng, the others weren’t already members of Qing Di Mountain.

“I do, Master!” said many of them, bowing before Emperor Ni Chen. How could they miss such an opportunity?

“Wait.” said someone at that moment.

The crowd turned around and saw Lin Feng walking towards the battle stage.

“Lin Feng!” shouted the emperor in purple clothes. Was Lin Feng insane? Was he going to cause trouble again? Had he forgotten that he couldn’t show how strong he was?

“Lin Feng, come back here!” shouted the emperor in purple clothes furiously.

He slowly turned around and smiled, “Master, Qi Yu Chen got to represent us on the battle stage, so why can’t I?”

# Chapter 1550: Zhou Tian Ruo Humiliated Three Times Over

---

When the emperor in purple clothes saw Lin Feng's smile, he was surprised.

Qi Yu Chen looked at Lin Feng in an ice-cold way. How dare Lin Feng enter the battle stage?

Qi Yu Chen wasn't the only one who was surprised. Qiao Chi Feng, Zhou Tian Ruo, Xia Tian Fan and the others were all staring at him. They had seen how aggressive Lin Feng was in Ba Huang. However, now that Lin Feng was controlled by Master Mi, he still seemed to show this arrogance.

Lin Feng glanced at the crowd and smiled indifferently. Emperor Shen Yu had told him that it'd be a pity if he didn't participate.

Lin Feng initially intended to hide in the Celestial Qi Castle and become stronger, but Emperor Shen Yu, who came with Emperor Ni Chen, had told him not to worry.

However, Lin Feng still didn't know who Emperor Shen Yu was. Even then, his social status couldn't be lower than Emperor Ni Chen's.

"Lin Feng, get down!" said the emperor in purple clothes at that moment. Lin Feng had gone too far.

"Master, don't be angry. I'm furious that the cultivators from Celestial Qi Castle, who represented us, are such trash! They humiliated us!" said Lin Feng to the emperor in purple clothes, smiling indifferently. He looked absolutely confident and arrogant.

The emperor in purple clothes looked even more upset, Qi Yun Sheng and the others were also upset. They knew about the rules governing cultivators who were controlled by them. How come Lin Feng was violating those rules? Was Master Mi's spell must not have been strong enough.

Lin Feng looked at Emperor Ni Chen.

“Master, can you give me a few minutes to prove myself?” asked Lin Feng straightforwardly.

The crowd looked at Emperor Ni Chen. He was smart, everybody knew that Emperor Ni Chen couldn't refuse such a request.

“No problem.” said Emperor Ni Chen smiling. As the crowd had thought, he couldn't refuse. Besides, there was no reason for him to refuse either.

When the members of the Celestial Qi Castle heard that, they all looked depressed, especially the emperor in purple clothes.

He had lost face and now Qing Di Mountain might notice how strong Lin Feng was.

“Thank you very much, Master.” said Lin Feng bowing respectfully and smiling in a resplendent way.

Lin Feng look at the crowd before he turned his attention to the people from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness.

“Zhou Tian Ruo!” said Lin Feng smiling mockingly.

“Revenge was a dish best served cold.” thought Lin Feng.

“Is the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness so weak? Didn't you have stronger cultivators to send? That guy is just a piece of trash!” said Lin Feng indifferently. It was the cultivators from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness' turn to be upset.

When Zhou Tian Xiao saw that Lin Feng was walking towards him, so he instantly became fearful. He had been humiliated by Lin Feng twice already.

“You have two options now. You either go back to the bleachers or I'll kick you so hard that you'll fly back to those bleachers.” said Lin Feng.

When the crowd thought that Zhou Tian Ruo was going to attack Lin Feng with his golden holy Qi, but instead he remained calm

while clenching his fists. His facial muscles twitched, and he looked furious, but he remained motionless.

“Why are you not stepping forward?” asked Lin Feng mockingly. Finally, Zhou Tian Ruo released his dazzling golden holy Qi, and an armor of golden holy Qi surrounded his body. Even if Zhou Tian Ruo feared Lin Feng, he still had to fight.

Lin Feng suddenly jumped ahead and condensed both empty space and wind abstruse energies. He didn't use any skills or technique, it was just a simple punch.

“Zhou Tian Ruo!” shouted Lin Feng. Zhou Tian Ruo looked into Lin Feng's demonic eyes, and cursing energies surrounded him, causing his life energies to be slowly drained. His godly awareness shook violently and so did his gold holy Qi.

“Kaboom!” Lin Feng finished condensing his energies and a gigantic pitch-black sword appeared. Next, he condensed Earth and demonic abstruse energies into the sword. His force was also multiplied by seven-hundred. His gigantic sword started suffocating Zhou Tian Ruo.

Zhou Tian Ruo sensed the cursing and death energies overwhelm him, making him look desperate. He was covered in a cold sweat, but he continued releasing golden holy Qi towards Lin Feng.

A sound rang as their energies met, followed by Zhou Tian Ruo falling to his knees and coughing up blood.

“You're still so weak!” said Lin Feng, kicking Zhou Tian Xiao towards the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness' bleachers.

Zhou Tian Xiao jumped forwards and caught Zhou Tian Ruo. Then he released ice-cold energies towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked at Zhou Tian Xiao and said calmly, “Back then, I humiliated Zhou Tian Ruo, and even though you're an emperor, you still attacked me. If I don't deserve to be called a cultivator, then I ask who in the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness

deserves to be called one?”

Strength was the most important thing in the world of cultivation. Zhou Tian Xiao was an emperor, so of course he was stronger than Lin Feng!

# Chapter 1551: Aggressive

---

When Zhou Tian Xiao heard Lin Feng, but he remained silent. Emperor Ni Chen was there, so he couldn't act recklessly. But someday, he'd definitely kill Lin Feng.

Zhou Tian Ruo had already been humiliated three times by Lin Feng: twice in the small world and once in the great world, in front of all the members of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, the members from the other celestial castles, and the members from Qing Di Mountain. Because of Lin Feng, Zhou Tian Ruo would never have the opportunity to join the Qing Di Mountain again. Plus, Lin Feng had injured him. In other words, he had destroyed his will from that moment on. Zhou Tian Ruo would hardly ever be happy again.

Apart from Zhou Tian Xiao and Zhou Tian Ruo, nobody from Celestial Qi Castle was happy to see Lin Feng acting this way. The emperor in purple clothes was glaring at Lin Feng with murder in his eyes. Lin Feng had already gotten out of control, but he didn't understand why. Had something happened to him while he was away?

However, even if Lin Feng had broken free from Master Mi's control, he still came back. Was he trying to draw Qing Di Mountain's attention? Was he putting his life at stake to impress them?

Emperor Ni Chen laughed after he saw that Lin Feng had easily defeated Zhou Tian Ruo. Then he asked, "Brother Shen Yu, what do you think of that boy?"

"Outstanding!" replied Emperor Shen Yu smiling. He didn't even need to see how strong Lin Feng was. Because of that boy, his teacher, an emperor, had knelt before the people from the Palace of Medicinal Kings and begged them to save his life. Could he be a bad cultivator given such devotion?

Emperor Ni Chen looked at Emperor Shen Yu in a strange way. That guy had just said “outstanding”? Lin Feng was talented and not weak, but he hadn’t shown how strong he really was. Why had Emperor Shen Yu said that? Emperor Ni Chen didn’t know that Emperor Shen Yu knew more about Lin Feng already.

“There are so many outstanding disciples in the nine castles and yet, you don’t think highly of any of them. Now you’re attaching such importance to a disciple from Celestial Qi Castle’s small world?” asked Emperor Ni Chen.

“Amongst those who come from the small worlds, some of them are incredible and will amaze the great world.” said Emperor Shen Yu smiling. Emperor Ni Chen was surprised and then laughed again.

“Such people are very rare.” said Emperor Ni Chen. Then, he looked at the battle stage again.

Lin Feng looked at the other strong cultivators, Qiao Chi Feng in particular. Then, he said, “I’ve already defeated that one. Those people from Celestial Qi Castle really can’t represent Celestial Qi Castle.”

Qiao Chi Feng was furious. Although Lin Feng had defeated him before, he was ready to get his revenge now. However, Lin Feng didn’t want to fight against him. He looked at the other cultivators, in particular the other cultivators from Celestial Qi Castle.

Only two people had ranked in the top eighteen amongst those young people from Celestial Qi Castle. Qi Yu Chen had ranked fifth and another one had ranked thirteenth. In the end, the Celestial Qi Castle had lost to the Celestial Palace of Punishing Thunders, thus losing their control over the small world from which Lin Feng was.

“Master, your eyes are really bad. There are so many strong cultivators in Celestial Qi Castle and surprisingly you only sent people who would make Celestial Qi Castle lose face.” said Lin Feng

to the emperor in purple clothes while smiling. The emperor in purple clothes was furious. By saying that, he was finally proving that he wasn't being controlled anymore.

"Master Ni Chen, my disciple is having some issues. He's disrespecting you, so I'm sorry about that. I'll stop him and punish him later for this." said the emperor in purple clothes to Emperor Ni Chen. He had to remove Lin Feng from the battle stage before Qing Di Mountain attached any more importance to him.

Emperor Ni Chen was surprised, but Emperor Shen Yu smiled and said in a low voice, "Brother Ni Chen, I want to continue watching him."

"Alright." said Emperor Ni Chen. He looked at the emperor in purple clothes and said, "No problem, stop interfering for now."

The emperor in purple clothes was surprised. Nobody could contradict Emperor Ni Chen. Even the leaders from the nine great celestial castles couldn't. By saying that, Emperor Ni Chen was saying that nobody could disturb Lin Feng as he continued to start fights.

Lin Feng smiled. Emperor Shen Yu had taken him back so of course he had to make use of this opportunity.

"Master, I was just trying to regain your prestige, yet you're saying that I am disrespecting these incredible people? I will show you just how bad your eyes are." said Lin Feng to the emperor in purple clothes. He looked at Qi Yu Chen and the other one and said, "You two, come fight me together."

Qi Yu Chen looked furious as he immediately released Qi.

Last time, Lin Feng had suddenly attacked him with death Qi and force, but Qi Yu Chen thought that in a fair fight that he was stronger than Lin Feng.

Energies rushed out and surrounded Qi Yu Chen. In a flash, Qi Yu Chen was surrounded by a golden picture spirit.



“Boom!” Qi Yu Chen jumped forwards and threw himself at Lin Feng. He had ranked fifth, so he was feeling confident in himself.

Demonic Qi rolled in waves as Lin Feng released his demonic territory. The aggressive energies blocked his territory’s strength. Qi Yu Chen continued running forwards and pushed the demonic territory back. Lin Feng’s skills were stronger than Qi Yu Chen’s skills, but Lin Feng’s cultivation level was too low. Qi Yu Chen was a cultivator of the ninth Zun Qi layer, which was a large difference.

A demon appeared behind Lin Feng’s back who looked very aggressive. With its appearance, Lin Feng’s territory suddenly became stronger, so much so that the empty spaces couldn’t oppress Lin Feng’s strength anymore.

After that, a gigantic golden axe appeared in Lin Feng’s hand. It was Xuan Yuan’s spirit. Lin Feng looked aggressive and brutal as he held it over his shoulder.

“Seventh Zun Qi layer and his Qi is already so powerful.” thought the crowd, shivering.

Qi Yu Chen shook his hands and terrifying empty space lights shot out towards Lin Feng.

“Dong!” Lin Feng jumped forwards as he released force which was multiplied by six-hundred, surrounding the sharp empty space energies like a cage.

Qi Yu Chen also released force multiplied by six-hundred, breaking the cage.

“Seven-hundred!” Lin Feng jumped forwards and released force multiplied by seven-hundred this time.

Qi Yu Chen’s heart was pounding as he noticed that Lin Feng’s force was increasing.

“Dong!” the ground shook and his golden energies exploded. This time, it was multiplied by eight-hundred!

# Chapter 1552: Shouting Furiously

---

“Seventh Zun Qi layer and his force is multiplied by eight-hundred!” the crowd was awestruck. As a cultivator’s force increased, their ability to control the Earth and sky increased. That young man had only broken through to the seventh Zun Qi layer, but his force was already multiplied by eight hundred. If he broke through to the ninth Zun Qi layer and had a force multiplied by a thousand, he’d be half an emperor already!

Possess a force of one-thousand required talent. Lin Feng secretly thanked the emperor who had made him dream those previous days. Lin Feng’s force had improved a lot in that dream.

The sky shook as Lin Feng released his aggressive demonic and immortal energies. Apart from his insane-looking demon, another shadow appeared behind Lin Feng which looked like an immortal demon.

The immortal and demonic energies prevented the empty space energies from moving forwards. As his territory weakened, Lin Feng’s demonic territory condensed the empty space energies.

Lin Feng stretched out his hand and released demonic energies which turned into a gigantic, pitch-black axe. That axe contained Earth, death, and immortal energies.

“Argh!” The demon shouted as Lin Feng raised his gigantic axe which then descended from the sky.

The axe cut apart everything in its path, including Qi Yu Chen’s golden lights. Qi Yu Chen joined his hands together and condensed a sword made of empty space energy.

“Boom!” The axe collided with the sword, causing lights to disperse in every direction. Qi Yu Chen’s clothes were suddenly torn apart, but Lin Feng’s clothes weren’t looking much better.

Qi Yu Chen held his composure for a moment, but then he shook

violently and coughed blood.

Lin Feng had taken their previous exchange better, so he ran towards Qi Yu Chen while condensing force which was multiplied by eight-hundred.

“Slash!” Blood splashed out of Qi Yu Chen’s mouth. He had lost a lot of strength, but he didn’t feel like giving up just yet.

Lin Feng jumped forwards and released more demonic Qi, which turned into a gigantic hand. He grabbed Qi Yu Chen by his throat, draining the blood from his face. He condensed as much strength as he could but it seemed useless.

Many people from Celestial Qi Castle suddenly stood up and looked at Lin Feng in a threatening way.

However, Lin Feng looked at Qi Yu Chen mockingly and said, “Will you have Yun come here?”

“She’s in the Celestial Qi Castle, don’t even think about seeing her again.” said Qi Yu Chen.

“Boom!” Lin Feng released demonic and fire Qi which started burning Qi Yu Chen’s hand and flew throughout his arm. He couldn’t release any energy to defend himself against the those energies, so all he could do was scream in pain.

“Bring Yun here!” this time, Lin Feng wasn’t talking to Qi Yu Chen, he was demanding the people from Celestial Qi Castle to bring her to him.

The face of the emperor in purple clothes turned deathly pale. Lin Feng wasn’t being controlled anymore, and now he was now starting to exact his revenge.

Qi Yu Chen’s body was covered in sweat, and his face was deathly pale. Lin Feng was cruel, on top of that, he was mocking him in front of everybody. Lin Feng had already crushed his arm.

“I’m going to go get her now!” said the emperor in purple clothes

as he disappeared. With his speed, he should come back quickly.

“You better hurry up!” said Lin Feng to the emperor in purple clothes.

Then, Lin Feng put Qi Yu Chen in an empty space cage and turned around.

First Zhou Tian Ruo, and now Qi Yu Chen were in a cage.

“Emperor Ni Chen!” shouted Qi Yun Sheng, standing up.

“Sit down!” yelled Lin Feng suddenly. Qi Yun Sheng frowned, nobody had ever shouted at him like that!

The crowd also shivered from Lin Feng’s shout. Qi Yun Sheng was an emperor and he was one of Qing Di Mountain’s cultivators. And yet, Lin Feng still dared shout at him furiously.

Lin Feng didn’t care about those things because those people from the Celestial Qi Castle were his enemies. He didn’t need to be polite with Qi Yun Sheng any longer.

“If you don’t want him to die in front of you, you better stay quiet!” yelled Lin Feng at Qi Yun Sheng.

Qi Yun Sheng was fixedly staring at Lin Feng’s pitch-black eyes, but it had no impact on him.

After a few moments of glaring at each other, he finally sat down. He wanted to do something, but Qi Yun Sheng was already severely injured. As long as he didn’t die, he’d have a chance to recover in the future. After all, Lin Feng wasn’t an emperor, and Qi Yu Chen’s injuries weren’t that severe.

After Qi Yun Sheng sat down, Lin Feng smiled coldly and glanced at Qi Yun Xiao.

“I told you that you had bad eyes. Qi Yu Chen is so weak can’t you see what a disgrace he is?! If you had let me fight, you wouldn’t have lost so much face.” said Lin Feng mockingly. Then, he looked at Yuan Fei, Ban Ruo, and Li Hen. They were his friends, but at

that moment, they were looking at him in a cold way.

“You will regret that very quickly.” thought Qi Yun Sheng. Did Lin Feng place all his hopes on Qing Di Mountain? Did he think that because he was a bit talented, Emperor Ni Chen would recruit him? Lin Feng was a bit too naive.

# Chapter 1553: Give It Back!

---

The emperor in purple clothes quickly came back with Mu Yun.

They landed on the edge of the bleachers. Mu Yun figured out what was going on after she noticed that Lin Feng had imprisoned Qi Yu Chen on the stage.

“Yun, go to the Celestial Wen Castle’s bleachers, Master will take care of you.” said Lin Feng to Mu Yun. Everybody thought that Lin Feng was talking about Emperor Ni Chen. Of course, with him there, nobody would dare harm her.

“Alright!” said Mu Yun without asking anything. She immediately went to the bleachers of the Celestial Wen Castle and calmly observed what was going on.

“Piss off!” Lin Feng smacked Qi Yu Chen and sent him flying back to Celestial Qi Castle’s bleachers.

The emperor in purple clothes caught Qi Yu Chen with some relief. It would have been difficult to explain why a strong and talented young man from the Celestial Qi Clan had been killed by Lin Feng. After all, Lin Feng had broken free from Master Mi’s control. Even then, it was still Qi Yu Chen’s fault, because he had sent someone to kill him, this all happened.

But what happened to Lin Feng after he was taken from Celestial Qi Castle?

Lin Feng glanced around, silencing the crowd out of fear.

This time, Lin Feng looked at the young cultivators from the Palace of Medicinal Kings. Then they frowned, wondering why he was acting so aggressive towards them.

However, they quickly realized that he wasn’t looking at them. He was actually looking at an old man in their bleachers: a medium-level emperor.

The old man's hair was fluttering in the wind as he glanced at Lin Feng indifferently. Lin Feng pointed at him and said, "Take the item out!"

"Eh?" everybody was astonished, what was he talking about?

Lin Feng wanted the ring that Emperor Yu had offered him.

The old man looked at Lin Feng indifferently. Surprisingly, Lin Feng, a cultivator of the seventh Zun Qi layer, dared ask for the ring back. Lin Feng was too brave.

But could a medium-level emperor take out a ring because a Zun cultivator was asking him to?

It didn't matter whether the ring was precious or not, it was all about face. What would people think if he did what Lin Feng was demanding of him?

"Take back what you said!" said the old man calmly.

Lin Feng's demonic Qi was still rolling in waves. He walked towards the eighteen strong cultivators while threatening some of them with his energies.

Amongst the strong young cultivators from the Palace of Medicinal Kings, four of them had ranked in the top eighteen, but they still didn't have the most points.

Having said that, amongst the four strong cultivators from the Palace of Medicinal Kings, one of them ranked second. Meaning he had only lost once to Wen Ao Feng.

Ye Sheng was the one who had ranked second. Lin Feng walked towards them while he released a force which was multiplied by eight-hundred. Ye Sheng didn't back down though; he walked towards Lin Feng with a force which was multiplied by seven-hundred.

The crowd noticed Ye Sheng's eyes gradually become green and bestial.

“Ye Sheng is extremely strong, even Wen Ao Feng needed to use a lot of strength to defeat him. Even though Lin Feng is strong, he still can’t defeat Ye Sheng. If Lin Feng attacks Ye Sheng, he’ll die.” thought the crowd.

Ye Sheng was the one who had complimented Jun Mo Xi in the small world.

Green lights shined bright and began attacking Lin Feng’s godly awareness. Lin Feng’s eyes became even darker as terrifying amounts of demonic and cursing strength collided with the green lights.

“What strong demonic intent. Even my eyes’ energies can’t destroy it.” thought Ye Sheng. Vines slowly surrounded his body as he turned into a tree with eyes glaring out from its trunk.

Vines moved in all directions, including Lin Feng’s direction.

Lin Feng released a Deadly Demon Punch which he had condensed force into. The vines broke apart, but some seeds jumped towards Lin Feng.

“Wind!” said Ye Sheng. Those seeds moved along with the wind towards Lin Feng, moving even faster than before.

“Fire!” Lin Feng released demon-fire. The seeds reached him, trying to invade his body and explode out. However, Lin Feng’s demon-fire was also extremely aggressive. Many of the seeds burnt and turned to ashes.

“Demon-fire, Lin Feng already knows several types of abstruse energies.” thought the crowd. Empty space, demon, fire, cursing, death, immortal...

“I need to finish this fight quickly.” thought Lin Feng. Ye Sheng was dangerous, and after contending against those seeds, Lin Feng would not underestimate him.



# Chapter 1554: Refusal

---

Lin Feng released empty space and wind energies, which surrounded his body. At the same time, silver wings appeared from his back.

“Bzzz!” Lin Feng jumped forwards with incredible speed.

“Slash...” a light streaked across the sky.

Ye Sheng released a vine king, and a robust branch moved to defend against Lin Feng’s sword. The sky shook as they clashed, but the vines exploded afterwards. Ye Sheng released more wind abstruse energies to try and match Lin Feng’s speed. His wind abstruse energies were level nine, but Lin Feng used several types of abstruse energies, so they were practically even.

Apart from speed, Lin Feng’s sword technique was also terrifyingly strong.

Another sword streaked across the sky. Lin Feng used Wind-Thunder Laceration, Desolate Ksana, and Nirvana Sunya Destruction sword attacks. The vines kept breaking apart from his constant assault, forcing Ye Sheng into a bad spot.

Dazzling silver lights filled the sky as countless swords condensed to form a web.

Ye Sheng didn’t dare take that move head-on, so he started to retreat.

Ye Sheng continued moving backwards until he reached the stairs which connected his group’s bleachers to the battle stage. The three others from his group were there too.

Ye Sheng suddenly stopped retreating and released even more vine energies.

Lin Feng was too fast as he made a final push forward.

The source of the nine netherworlds appeared in Lin Feng’s eyes,

and he started chanting the nine netherworlds song as he closed in.

“Boom boom!” the vine spirit broke. Ye Sheng had just missed his chance to kill Lin Feng. Now Lin Feng was attacking his soul, causing some blood to drip from his eyes.

“Be careful!” shouted someone to Ye Sheng. Ye Sheng sensed the terrifying sword energies descending from the sky, so he enveloped himself in a cocoon of vines. Then he turned into a trunk just as the sword crashed onto him. Even against all these preparations, he was still sent flying. A large hole had appeared in the trunk, and Lin Feng’s sword was stuck inside. Ye Sheng was propelled away and crashed against the wall of the bleachers behind his three fellow disciples.

Lin Feng didn’t stop, he continued moving forwards, his feet propelled using a force which had been multiplied by eight-hundred.

“Boom!” the three other cultivators from the Palace of Medicinal Kings released force. They were getting ready to fight, especially the strongest one.

“Retreat!” shouted the old man to the cultivators.

A strong emperor from the Palace of Medicinal Kings was asking his disciples to run away. He must have known how strong Lin Feng was now, and he didn’t want to lose any of his disciples.

“Let’s go!” said the strong cultivator in the middle as he threw out a punch.

Lin Feng’s sword didn’t kill anyone, instead it crashed onto the battle stage, creating a gigantic fissure.

Lin Feng didn’t want to go too far for there was a limit to how far Emperor Shu could protect him. So, he didn’t chase them any further.

Everybody was looking at the two. Just what did Lin Feng want from the old man?

Lin Feng looked at the old man and declared, “Someday, I’ll come to the Palace of Medicinal Kings and I’ll make you regret all of this.”

How could he act so arrogantly before the Palace of Medicinal Kings’s people?

“Let’s wait and see if you’re still alive at that time.” said the old man calmly. He didn’t really care about younger people.

Lin Feng gave him one last glare before he turned around and looked at Emperor Ni Chen.

“Master, how strong am I compared to them?” asked Lin Feng calmly. He didn’t look arrogant and proud anymore, but he did sound confident.

The crowd figured that Lin Feng was just trying to be accepted by Qing Di Mountain, but Lin Feng didn’t care about that. He was convinced that Emperor Shen Yu had other plans for him. Lin Feng wouldn’t refuse if Emperor Shen Yu wanted to take him anywhere. Actually, Lin Feng was asking Emperor Ni Chen that question because of Yuan Fei and the others.

The Qing Di Mountain was the ruler of the region. Emperor Ni Chen could change Yuan Fei and the others’ fates.

Everybody looked at Emperor Ni Chen.

Ni Chen looked at Lin Feng and smiled in a gentle way, “You’re quite talented, but you’re young and arrogant.”

“Kacha!” on the side of Celestial Qi Castle, Qi Yun Sheng clenched his fists and smiled coldly. Just like he had thought, Qing Di Mountain had refused Lin Feng!

The old-bearded man of the Palace of Medicinal Kings laughed, thinking, “Lin Feng is doomed!”

“Lin Feng is doomed, isn’t he?” thought many people. Yun’s face turned deathly pale, worried that they would reject Lin Feng, and

thus her.

“Hehe.” at that moment, a person in black clothes smiled thinly and stood up. Then he said indifferently, “Are you blind? If you don’t want him, I do.”

# Chapter 1555: Leaving

---

The crowd was astonished, who was that arrogant? Who dared say that?

They turned around and were shocked, “It’s him, it’s Emperor Shen Yu!” thought the crowd. Qing Di Mountain, blind?

“Who’s Emperor Shen Yu?” thought many people. Emperor Ni Chen was a high-level emperor with a high social status. He had refused Lin Feng and against all expectations, Emperor Shen Yu had intervened.

Without a doubt, Emperor Shen Yu wasn’t a member of Qing Di Mountain, otherwise, he wouldn’t have asked Emperor Ni Chen if he was blind.

“I’ve never heard of Emperor Shen Yu. He’s not from Qing Di Mountain, and he’s not a strong cultivator from the nine castles either, but he is standing next to Emperor Ni Chen. Who could he be?”

Emperor Ni Chen was surprised when he heard Emperor Shen Yu, but then he smiled and said, “You really think highly of that boy?”

“He proved how strong he is. You rejected him, but I can’t miss this opportunity. I’m taking him away.” said Emperor Shen Yu.

Ni Chen looked at him in a deep and meaningful way, as if he had sensed that something was amiss.

Emperor Shen Yu and he weren’t very close, they were emperors from two different groups, however, he had encountered Emperor Shen Yu on the way and had invited him to come with him. On the way, Emperor Shen Yu had remained cold and silent, that is until today where he had started smiling more and more. Besides, he had disappeared the past few days.

He glanced at Lin Feng and suddenly, he had the impression that

Emperor Shen Yu had come for him.

“There are many outstanding disciples in the nine great celestial castles, but you thought highly of none of them.” said Emperor Ni Chen smiling indifferently. He was trying to make sense of it all.

“I like talented and outstanding young people.” said Shen Yu indifferently. It was like a normal dialogue, but the crowd had the sensation that it was a kind of implicit conflict.

“Brother Yu Shen, do you think he’s more talented than all the others?” asked Emperor Ni Chen.

“Of course!” said Emperor Shen Yu.

“Since it’s that way, after you leave, I will bring those people back to the Qing Di Mountain and on some other day, we’ll compare their strength again. Then we’ll see who was right.” said Emperor Ni Chen calmly and serenely.

“I already know the outcome, but if you insist, I don’t mind. Some other day, we can have a small competition.” said Emperor Shen Yu smiling indifferently. He looked enigmatic and unfathomable. Nobody knew what he was thinking.

“Master, Lin Feng violated the rules of my castle, and he caused us many troubles.” said Qi Yun Sheng standing up and looking at Emperor Shen Yu in a cold way.

Emperor Shen Yu turned around and looked at Qi Yun Sheng calmly and indifferently, “Tell the leader of your castle to come and talk to me!”

Qi Yun Sheng was petrified and felt humiliated. He regretted talking just now.

“Lin Feng, are you done here?” asked Emperor Shen Yu.

Lin Feng wasn’t done. Yuan Fei and the others were still there in Master Mi’s control, but he couldn’t say it. Emperor Shen Yu was taking him away, that was already a big deal. Besides, he had

offended many people already. Emperor Ni Chen, the Celestial Qi Castle, the Palace of Medicinal Kings and so on. Now, everybody would push their hatred from him to Emperor Shen Yu. If he asked Emperor Shen Yu to ask for his friends, the situation might become chaotic.

He had to rely on his own abilities to solve the issue.

Lin Feng looked at the members of the Celestial Qi Castle and the Palace of Medicinal Kings in a cold way, thinking that someday, they'd meet again.

Lin Feng went to Emperor Shen Yu and said, "Master, I'm taking Mu Yun as well."

Mu Yun wasn't strong, so if Lin Feng left, she'd be in danger.

"You can do whatever you want, that has nothing to do with me." said Emperor Shen Yu smiling. Mu Yun was smiling in a resplendent way as well. Finally, she was going to have the life of a normal person. She had never thought that hosting Emperor Yu and Lin Feng would change her life!

"Let's go." said Emperor Shen Yu. He had only come to the nine great celestial castles to take Lin Feng away, and now that he had accomplished that, there was no point in staying.

The three people left. Lin Feng looked at the ground from the sky, looking at all his friends. His teacher was healed now, so Lin Feng would come back someday and save them.

"They're gone." thought the crowd. That mysterious emperor had taken him away.

Emperor Ni Chen watched as he left and said, "Amongst the twenty best cultivators today, if you want to join Qing Di Mountain, you're welcome to!"

# Chapter 1556: Yao Ye Island

---

The competition between Emperor Ni Chen and Emperor Shen Yu's disciples wouldn't happen any time soon, but the controllers of the small world were already determined: The Celestial Palace of the Punishing Thunders, the Celestial Wen Castle and the Palace of Medicinal Kings. They would control the small worlds for the next ten thousand years; however, the Celestial Wen Castle had the dominant power. The Wen Clan in Ba Huang would start rising!

The Palace of Medicinal Kings would also do incredible things in Ba Huang and Jiu You in the next ten-thousand years just like the Celestial Qi Castle had.

The Celestial Palace of the Punishing Thunders had ranked third, so they would probably be in charge of protecting the passage from the great world to the small world.

However, the Celestial Wen Castle and the Palace of Medicinal Kings didn't know that the Celestial Qi Castle began panicking everyone in the small worlds when they began to feel that they would lose control over the small world. Many people who had always dreamt of coming to the great world were planning on leaving or had already come out.

Concerning the nine great celestial castles, Lin Feng had nothing to do with them for the time being. He had left with Emperor Shen Yu already and they were travelling at breakneck speeds.

At that moment, under Lin Feng's feet, there was just a vast ocean with many islands. Emperor Shen Yu slowed down, so that they could clearly see below them. Some islands looked desolate and gloomy, while others were vast and populated. The largely populated islands didn't look like islands, instead they looked like gigantic cities resting on the sea.

"We're now in a territory that is out of the Qing Di Mountain's jurisdiction, but we're not too far off. Of course, distance is relative



for cultivators. For extremely strong cultivators, the world is small.” said Emperor Shen Yu. Lin Feng nodded, and Mu Yun listened carefully. It was the first time that she had traveled so far. For Lin Feng and Mu Yun, the distance between them and Celestial Qi Castle was extremely far now.

“We’re here.” said Shen Yu. Below them was a gigantic area filled with a terrifying bestial Qi. They couldn’t see any human silhouettes though.

“That island is bigger than a city, but there aren’t many people.” thought Mu Yun. Emperor Shen Yu took Lin Feng and Mu Yun to the top of a mountain.

“Master Shen Yu, where are we?” asked Lin Feng curiously.

“Yao Ye Island.” replied Emperor Shen Yu. “Lin Feng show me all of your abstruse energies, you seem to know several sorts.”

“Alright.” Lin Feng nodded. Emperor Shen Yu had helped him and Emperor Yu before, so he had no reason to hide anything from Emperor Shen Yu.

Lin Feng released demon abstruse energies, and a black cloud appeared above him. His first abstruse energy, demon type, was level eight.

Then, he released death abstruse energy, level eight.

Then empty space abstruse energy, wind, cursing, Earth and fire.

Lin Feng had used those before, but Emperor Shen Yu was amazed that all of them were level eight.

Mu Yun’s mouth was wide open, dumbstruck. Those were... Lin Feng’s abstruse energies?

Lin Feng wasn’t done, thunder abstruse energy descended from the sky, making it eight types.

Then, Lin Feng also released immortal abstruse energy.

“Nine!” Emperor Shen Yu was astonished. Mu Yun gasped with

amazement. Nine types of abstruse energies!

Then, Lin Feng also released desolate abstruse energy, making it ten.

“Ten sorts of abstruse energies!” Emperor Shen Yu was smiling. Lin Feng probably possessed a body which allowed him to understand those ten different sorts of abstruse energies, which also meant that he would be able to learn up to three different types of cosmic energies.

“I’m not done.” said Lin Feng. He then released life abstruse energy. Emperor Shen Yu’s heart was pounding.

“That’s enough. No need to show me more.” said Emperor Shen Yu. He was very surprised. He knew that Lin Feng knew several types of abstruse energies, but he wouldn’t have thought he’d know that many.

Emperor Shen Yu was very happy. He was certain his heart could take the shock if Lin Feng showed him anymore.

Mu Yun was smiling, she wasn’t as astonished as Emperor Shen Yu because she understood cultivation less. She just understood that Lin Feng was very talented, and she was happy for him.

“Lin Feng, I will give you some time to become stronger. Increase the level of your abstruse energies, also, your force is already multiplied by eight hundred, it’ll also need to be multiplied by one-thousand. In this world where there are many strong cultivators, you’re still considered weak. You need become an emperor as soon as possible.” said Emperor Shen Yu.

“Alright.” Lin Feng nodded. He knew that he was a bit weak in the great world, but Lin Feng hadn’t seen much yet.

But it was too early to think about those things. He first had to deal with the Celestial Qi Castle and the Palace of Medicinal Kings.

“What powers do you use?” asked Emperor Shen Yu to Mu Yun. Mu Yun released some celestial Qi. Emperor Shen Yu nodded and

said, “I will help you find a teacher in Yao Ye Island.”

“Thank you, Master.” said Mu Yun bowing. She was touched.

“Bzzz!” At that moment, a red light appeared to be moving towards Mu Yun. Emperor Shen Yu was surprised, grabbed her, and made her move away. However, the red light grabbed Lin Feng instead.

“Stop!” shouted Emperor Shen Yu. He turned into a black beam of light and chased the previous light.

“Slash...” as he grabbed the red light, he tore a piece of robe off. The person suddenly stopped and smiled at Emperor Shen Yu, “You’re so serious!”

# Chapter 1557: Many Changes

---

“Let him go!” demanded Emperor Shen Yu.

That woman looked at Lin Feng and caressed his cheeks. Lin Feng thought she smelt good. Then she smiled and said, “Little boy, you’re so handsome, you should stay with me. If you do, I’ll show you the pleasures of life.”

Lin Feng rolled his eyes. What was this place? That woman was terrifyingly strong, but how could he refuse having sex with an astonishingly beautiful woman. He was speechless.

Her third eye was red, which was a cute touch.

“I don’t deserve you, Master.” said Lin Feng smiling wryly. That woman was, without a doubt, extremely strong. She looked so young, but many strong cultivators looked young.

“Do you think I’m old? Just consider me as your older sister!” said the woman giggling, still ignoring Emperor Shen Yu.

Lin Feng was speechless and looked at Emperor Shen Yu for help. Emperor Shen Yu said, “If you don’t let him off, don’t blame me for being impolite.”

“You have a bad temper, I don’t feel like playing with you anymore.” said the woman before she disappeared.

“Her name is Hu Yue and call her “sister” if you see her again. She doesn’t like being called Master.” said Shen Yu. Lin Feng was still speechless but nodded.

“Let’s go. I’m taking you somewhere else.” said Shen Yu. After a short time, they arrived in the sky above the mountain range.

“That guy is sleeping.” whispered Shen Yu. Lin Feng and Mu Yun gazed into the distance and saw a strange mountain with hands and feet. It looked like a human, or maybe an ape.

“Wake up, wake up...” shouted Shen Yu furiously. His voice

made many stones explode.

“Kacha!” A loud sound reverberated, causing Lin Feng’s head to shake.

That gigantic ape was a few hundreds of meters tall and he started moving after Shen Yu yelled. The ape’s eyes were the size of Lin Feng’s upper body, causing him to feel oppressed.

The gigantic ape took a step forward. Although they were at the top of a mountain and the ape was standing at the foot of the mountain, his head was eye-level with Lin Feng and the others.

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at that gigantic hand, but Emperor Shen Yu pulled him away. The Earth and sky shook, and then the mountain they were standing on exploded.

“How strong...” Lin Feng couldn’t believe his eyes. If Yuan Fei had been there, he would have been so happy to see this monstrous ape.

“You woke me up again, moron!” said a voice furiously.

“You moron!” yelled the beast again.

“Argh!” It was overwhelming. Lin Feng had the sensation that his soul was going to leave his body. Their voices carried soundwave strength. The ape moved his gigantic hand towards the sky, as if he was trying to capture the sky.

But he didn’t reach anything, Lin Feng just saw a light. The other beast was a hundred meters long but Lin Feng couldn’t see anything when it moved. The ape simply continued yelling, “Moron!”

The ape looked furious but knew that his opponent was too fast.

“Apart from escaping, what else can you do?” said the ape aggressively.

“Stop it now.” said Emperor Shen Yu to the two beasts. “Why are you two arguing? I brought a little boy here who knows many sorts

of abstruse energies. Can you teach him about Earth and wind abstruse energies? I want to see which one he can master first.”

“Hmph, Shen Yu, do you think I’m like that moron? A cultivator of the seventh Zun Qi layer, a human being on top of that! If his abstruse energy doesn’t level up quickly, I’ll have to stay with him for years.” said the beast in the sky.

“Lin Feng, release your ten different sorts of abstruse energies and show them.” said Emperor Shen Yu. Lin Feng nodded and then released his ten sorts of abstruse energies.

“So many different types of abstruse energies!” the beast in the sky incredulous.

“I have to go and find some other people, so tell me if you agree or not. If you don’t, I’ll have to take him with me.” said Emperor Shen Yu indifferently. The beast in the sky asked, “But he’s a human being!”

“How can you be so stupid? When the Yao Ye Island was in trouble, who helped us? Human beings or animals?” asked Emperor Shen Yu. “So, are you doing it or not?”

“Bzzz!” the beast in the sky turned into a light, enveloping Lin Feng in a gale of winds.

“Bastard!” shouted the ape furiously. Then the ground trembled as the ape moved again.

# Chapter 1558: Practicing Hard

---

A silhouette was flickering back and forth above the island's mountains.

“Bzzz!” Lin Feng continued traveling back and forth, attempting to fuse with the wind.

Lin Feng didn't stop either, he seemed determined to gain something.

“Finally, I mastered the wind. Now the real wind won't affect me again.” whispered Lin Feng, rising up in the air. It was as if the air didn't exist anymore, he could move freely in the sky.

Lin Feng had already spent a few months on Yao Ye Island, so he knew where he was now. They were in a bestial world, amongst animal clans. The island he was on was also the most important one.

The stone ape master would make him break stones to teach him Earth energy while the bird had him flying back and forth to understand wind and speed abstruse energy.

Apart from that, some other beasts came to teach him other energies. His abstruse energies were all improving as a result. He also created dreams to practice cultivation inside.

“Brother Feng, I came to see you.” said a woman in red clothes. She was in the air above him, so Lin Feng could see almost everything. It was obvious that she was trying to seduce him.

“Sister Hu Yue!” Lin Feng was used to seeing her now.

“Brother Feng, I'm taking you somewhere.” said Hu Yue smiling. She turned into a light after she grabbed Lin Feng and streaked across the sky. Lin Feng was upside down and his hair was violently fluttering in the wind. But he hardly noticed that because he was in her arms, her skin was pressed up against his.

Hu Yue took Lin Feng out of Yao Ye Island and they flew over an ocean. They arrived very high up in the sky where everything was purple. It was terrifying like a storm.

“Kaboom!” terrifying thunders descended from the sky. Lin Feng saw a mountain range explode on the ocean.

“Those thunders are terrifying.” thought Lin Feng. Hu Yue took him higher up in the sky to a purple castle. She shouted, “King of the Thunder Beasts, why don’t you come out to see me?”

More thunders descended from the sky after she screamed. Explosions sounded as a winged thunder beast appeared and said, “Hu Yue, I don’t remember offending you recently.”

“King of the Thunder Beasts, I brought my little brother. I want you to teach him some things for a while. Please help him raise his thunder abstruse energy to the maximum level. I’m off.” said Hu Yue. Then she left as quick as she came. Lin Feng looked at King of the Thunder Beasts, almost angry at that bewitchingly beautiful woman for leaving him there.

“King of the Thunder Beasts, Master!” said Lin Feng, he was almost paralyzed in fear. Terrifying lightning descended from the sky and surrounded him. Then, the King of the Thunder Beasts turned into a light and streaked across the sky to grab him. He threw him at a mountain under the flying palace.

“Sense these five different sorts of thunderous energies!” said a loud voice. Lin Feng raised his head and looked at the ancient purple palace, rolling his eyes for he knew what would come next.

“Kaboom!” Five different types of lightning descended from the castle and assaulted Lin Feng. He knew that he would have to endure that agony for a long time, so he took out his Tian Ji Sword to train under these energies.

One month later, Hu Yue came back. Lin Feng looked sharp and charged. His skin was even purple.



“You’re getting even more handsome, Brother Feng!” said Hu Yue giggling. Lin Feng looked at her, he felt like crying and smiling at the same time. He had finally discovered what thunderous energies really were this time. Five types of lightning could bombard people, seven types of lightning could destroy bodies, and nine types of lightning could destroy souls. His body had been cleansed properly from the constant assault this last month.

“I wanted to take you somewhere else, but since you look angry, just forget about it.” said Hu Yue smiling mockingly.

“Eh...” Lin Feng’s eyes were twinkling. Then he said, “How could I be angry at you, Sister Hu Yue, I don’t even know how to thank you enough. I’m infinitely grateful.”

Even though that month had been horrifyingly painful, he had progressed quickly.

“Not bad.” said Hu Yue. She stretched her slender white hand and grabbed Lin Feng, “Come, I’ll take you to my next friend.”

Lin Feng smiled wryly, grabbed her hand, and they disappeared in a flash.

Time passed, and different seasons rages, leaves and petals grew and fell unceasingly. The Yao Ye Island was always changing. Lin Feng was resting on a gigantic stone, dreaming.

In his dream, Qiu Yue Xin and Meng Qing were there talking to him.

“Meng Qing, your cultivation is special, so you don’t need my dreams. However, Yue Xin, what kind of dream do you need? I can create one for you.” said Lin Feng to the girl. Initially, Lin Feng took out Meng Qing and Qiu Yue Xin who had been practicing in the Jade Emperor’s palace and brought them into his dream. He had been practicing the Dream of Life Ancient Scriptures for a while, and now he could have people enter his dreams. If he was stronger than them, he could force them into a dream.

“Lin Feng, help me study the four seasons and the birth of the ten thousand things of creation.” replied Qiu Yue Xin.

“Alright.” A tree instantly appeared in the dream. He also decorated the dream so that the scenery appealed to Qiu Yue Xin.

Outside the dream, on the stone, there were two beautiful women. Hu Yue smiled and said, “He’s sleeping!”

“Sister Yun, are those fruit for me or him?” asked Hu Yue smiling.

“You can eat two, but I will keep two for Lin Feng.” said Yun as she handed a green fruit over to Hu Yue.

“It’s okay. I don’t need any. Let him have them all. He’ll like that.” said Hu Yue, smiling before asking, “How long have you been on Yao Ye Island?”

“One year and one month.” replied Yun. One year had passed now. Even though she had spent all her time there, she felt happy and relaxed. Her teacher taught her many things and she didn’t feel under pressure, like when she was working for the Celestial Qi Castle. She could do whatever she wanted now. Sometimes, she also went on small trips with her teacher.

“One year already? Time passes so fast. It’s time for Brother Feng to go and travel a bit.” said Hu Yue smiling. It was the first time that beasts from Yao Ye Island were being so nice with humans.

# Chapter 1559: New Emperor

---

At that moment, a gigantic demon ape was practicing cultivation on the island with them. He was practicing a punching technique, which cause everything around him to quake incessantly and the mountains to explode.

“Little Demon Ape!” shouted someone at that moment. The Great Earth Demon Ape raised his head and looked at the person, it was a woman in red clothes.

“Sister Hu Yue!” shouted the Great Earth Demon Ape.

“Little Demon Ape, fight against Lin Feng, but don’t kill him.” said Hu Yue giggling. The Great Earth Demon Ape turned around and saw a human flying towards him.

“Just don’t kill him.” After Lin Feng heard that, he shivered. How gentle! Lin Feng was used to the way she acted by now.

The Great Earth Demon Ape looked at Lin Feng mockingly, smirking from the corner of his mouth. The girl had always annoyed him with menial tasks, but finally he was excited, he could do something he liked. However, the Great Earth Demon Ape was worried that Lin Feng was too weak!

The Great Earth Demon Ape released Earth cosmic energy towards Lin Feng.

“Bzzz!” Lin Feng moved like the wind and disappeared from where he was a moment before. The Great Earth Demon Ape was surprised from his sudden speed. Now Lin Feng was getting closer, which caused the Great Earth Demon Ape to smile more.

“Where are you going?” asked the ape, trying to catch Lin Feng. A force multiplied by one-thousand enveloped Lin Feng. The ape wanted to see how Lin Feng intended to dodge that.

A light appeared, and several clones of Lin Feng appeared while moving with incredible speed. With that, he finally made it to the

Great Earth Demon Ape and punched the air in his direction. The sky trembled as the punch crashed onto the Great Earth Demon Ape who was again surprised. He lowered his head, surprised that he felt that punch.

“What a terrifying physical body!” thought Lin Feng. His punches had done absolutely nothing to the Great Earth Demon Ape. Lin Feng understood what kind of beast he was though, he controlled both Earth and demonic energies, so his defense was bound to be astonishing.

The first time that Lin Feng met the Great Earth Demon Ape, she made them fight. How cruel!

Just like Lin Feng had thought, after training there for some time, she took him away and brought him to a floating island. But Lin Feng felt weak, he sensed a counterforce which could make him fly away.

Finally, when he couldn't endure it anymore, he left the floating island and went back to Yao Ye Island. He continued practicing cultivation there. Hu Yue often took him to some other places to help him practice. Even though each time was difficult, Lin Feng was becoming stronger. Each time Hu Yue appeared, she asked Lin Feng whether he'd fallen in love with her or not, and each time Lin Feng shivered. He wanted to live on so he didn't say anything which would upset her.

Time seemed to pass by fast on Yao Ye Island. A year and seven months had already passed since Emperor Shen Yu had taken him there, but Lin Feng had the impression that only a month had passed. During this time, not only were his energies and force improving, but his physical body was improving as well. He could even take a slap from the Great Earth Demon Ape

Back in Qing Di Mountain, things were also moving along.

Qing Di Mountain was a gigantic mountain inside Qing Di City and acted as a holy cultivation ground.

At that moment, a few silhouettes were standing at the top of a mountain, looking down at everyone from above.

“More than a year and a half have passed.” whispered someone. If Lin Feng had been there, he would have recognized Qi Yu Chen, who now looked even stronger than before.

“Lin Feng!” he said clenching his fists while condensing terrifying energies. He could picture killing Lin Feng. His force was already multiplied by one-thousand now. After kill Lin Feng, he’d practice cultivation even harder and would quickly become an emperor.

“So, you still want to kill him so bad?” said someone at that moment. Qi Yu Chen turned around and saw Zhou Tian Ruo.

“Of course.” said Qi Yu Chen in an ice-cold way.

“I’ll kill Lin Feng myself.” said Zhou Tian Ruo as he released dazzling golden holy Qi. He hated Lin Feng as well.

“We’ll see who gets to kill him first.” said Qi Yu Chen. Emperor Ni Chen had recruited twenty people only because of the agreement between him and Emperor Shen Yu. Emperor Ni Chen had then appointed emperors to teach them personally.

During the time since, they had all become terrifying. Qi Yu Chen, Zhou Tian Ruo, and so on were all extremely confident in their abilities, and they were cultivator of the very top of the Zun Qi layer. Only one more step and they’d become emperors.

“Of course, I don’t think that Lin Feng has been wasting any time either.” said Zhou Tian Ruo indifferently. He knew how talented Lin Feng was. With the strength of the seventh Zun Qi layer, he was already terrifying. Maybe that Lin Feng had already reached the ninth Zun Qi layer now.

“Boom!” Suddenly, a terrifying strength fell from the sky. Everybody on Qing Di Mountain, including Zhou Tian Ruo, turned around and saw a beam of cosmic energy pierce the sky.

“Someone has broken through to the Huang Qi layer!” many of the young men from Qing Di Mountain recognized what that light meant.

“Cosmic strength, Wen Ao Feng must have broken through to the Huang Qi layer!” thought Zhou Tian Ruo and Qi Yu Chen.

# Chapter 1560: The Everlasting Celestial Emperor's News

---

There was a pitch-black area on Yao Ye Island which never changed. At that moment, a silhouette had arrived in that pitch-black area and asked, "What's going on?" It was impossible to know who had talked, it was too dark.

"There is news from the Everlasting Celestial Emperor." said a silhouette.

"What news?" asked a voice.

The silhouette then proceeded to tell him about the fall of the Everlasting Celestial Emperor.

"How did the other groups react?" asked the voice of darkness indifferently. When the Everlasting Celestial Emperor fell, his palace disappeared and finally, it has reappeared."

"The Celestial Qingling Palace has already sent their disciples. The Palace of the Gods won't waste any time either. Qing Di Mountain won't miss their chance, but they didn't send any imperial forces, they only sent disciples who hadn't broken through to the Huang Qi layer first to inspect the area."

"Tell Shen Yu to deal with that and inform me of the progress." said the voice in the darkness.

"I will, Your Highness the Beast of the Night." said that person nodding. Then, he left.

Yao Ye Island wasn't far from Qing Di Mountain's territory. Apart from Qing Di Mountain and Yao Ye Island, there were two other great imperial forces, of whom possessed many emperors. They were called the Palace of the Gods and the Celestial Qingling Palace.

Apart from the four great emperors, many strong cultivators

would continuously fight between them, some rose, some fell. The great world was ever-changing as few of them were immortal.

After the news spread, many people went insane and started looking for the Everlasting Celestial Emperor's palace. He used to be an incredible fighter who had amazed the world. When the Everlasting Celestial Emperor was still a cultivation emperor, he had killed fifty-six emperors in the same battle. Eighty of them were the same level as him. (TRANSLATOR'S NOTE: we'll have to see what he really meant because it is definitely a mistake the author made)

After the fall of the Everlasting Celestial Emperor, there were also many who mourned for him.

After having received news from the Everlasting Celestial Emperor, Qing Di Mountain reacted immediately, but the other forces also learnt about it just as quickly.

At that moment, Lin Feng was still in a dream. Even though the animals of Yao Ye Island were nice to him, Meng Qing was also an animal and her status was incredible. After he had met her mother, he knew he had to keep Meng Qing inside the Jade Emperor's palace. But there, they could still dream together.

"Lin Feng!" said Emperor Shen Yu. He had also practiced cultivation diligently for over a year now. The woman had taken care of Lin Feng had told Emperor Shen Yu about his progress, so he knew that Lin Feng hadn't wasted any time.

Lin Feng woke up and opened his eyes. He saw Emperor Shen Yu and smiled, "Master!"

"Lin Feng, I came to tell you something. You must go back to the nine great celestial castles." said Emperor Shen Yu. Lin Feng was nodded, "What for?"

"There is news from the Everlasting Celestial Emperor. Go there and try to find some clues." said Emperor Shen Yu. "Of course, this



time, you're not going as an individual, you will represent Yao Ye Island. Take this Yao Ye Amulet so that nobody thinks of harming you."

Emperor Shen Yu threw the Yao Ye Amulet at Lin Feng. Lin Feng looked at it, and saw the word, "Yao Ye" written on it.

"Alright!" said Lin Feng. After preparing for a short time, he left again. He wouldn't have thought that the first time he'd leave Yao Ye Island, that he would be going back to the nine great celestial castles. Besides, what a coincidence, it had something to do with the Everlasting Celestial Emperor. Lin Feng remembered his bronze plate and how it had activated inside his demonic territory. Did it really come from the Everlasting Celestial Emperor's palace?

"I'll take you to the periphery of the Qing Di Mountain, otherwise, it'll take you too long to get there!" said Emperor Shen Yu. His silhouette flickered as he grabbed Lin Feng and then they were off.

Lin Feng arrived in the Qing Di Mountain, and Emperor Shen Yu left as soon as he dropped him off. Now, Lin Feng was alone on his sword flying.

There were many gigantic cities in the Qing Di Mountain. However, none of them were as powerful as the nine great celestial castles' cities. Even if there were some who were close, they couldn't have as much power because of their geographical location.

"I can see the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness." thought Lin Feng as he gazed into the distance. Emperor Shen Yu had given Lin Feng a map, therefore, Lin Feng could recognize the surroundings. However, Lin Feng's target destination was inside the buffer zone.

"I see Buzhou Mountain." Lin Feng could see a mountain which reached into the sky. It was Buzhou Mountain, the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness' main peak.

Lin Feng continued moving forwards, ignoring the mountain. There were two silhouettes at the top of Buzhou Mountain. One of them was wearing a purple and golden dragon robe, he looked like deity. He had broken through to the ninth Zun Qi layer.

The other one was an extraordinary-looking young man who was wearing a Taoist robe. He looked like an ordinary young man, but the one with the dragon robe was looking at him in a respectful way.

“Yao Ye Island is way too slow.” said the one who wore the purple golden robe.

“Don’t worry. They’ve still managed to make it in time.” said the one in the Taoist robe indifferently.

“I just wanted to see who they sent.” said the one who was wearing the purple golden robe.

“Maybe he ignored us. Let’s go.” said the one in the Taoist robe. But his interlocutor shook his head, “Animals aren’t like beasts, you don’t understand their temperament. If he sees us, he’ll probably come and kill us.”

The one in the purple golden robe then rose up in the air, he wanted to see what beast Yao Ye Island had sent after waiting for so long.

“Those people are from Celestial Qingling Palace and the Palace of the Gods.” thought Lin Feng. Emperor Shen Yu had told him about them. Lin Feng hadn’t thought they’d wait for him on Buzhou Mountain though. Of course, they didn’t know that this time, Yao Ye Island hadn’t sent a beast but a human being!

# Chapter 1561: Back in a Familiar Place

---

There were a great many people who had gathered at the bleachers, talking about something.

“Since the news of the Everlasting Celestial Emperor emerged here, the influential groups from all the nine great celestial castles must inform everybody about what they know. I’ve heard that some Everlasting Bronze Plates have appeared, so if anyone has some, they must share.” said a strong cultivator who was standing in the bleachers.

“I agree. The nine great celestial castles must explain everything clearly. They can’t benefit from all this on their own.” said someone else.

“My group, Celestial Qi Castle also wants to say something. Indeed, if anybody hears about the bronze plates, please share what you know with everybody else because we don’t know what they are, and we’ve never heard of them before.” said Qi Yun Xiao.

Celestial Qi Castle had already lost control over the small world, but after they had told everybody that they lived in a fake world, most people left the small world already. Besides, with the tensions between the Celestial Wen Castle and Celestial Qi Castle, staying in the small world was a bit troublesome.

“The Celestial Wen Castle thinks the same.” said Wen Ao Feng. They had hurried to come back after hearing the gossip. This time, Wen Ao Feng’s social status was a bit different because he could also represent the Qing Di Mountain.

“Hmph! Just wait for the others. I saw them on Buzhou Mountain waiting for Yao Ye Island’s people. They should arrive soon.” said a strong cultivator in a cold way. He didn’t dare contradict Qing Di Mountain. They had to wait for Celestial Qinling Palace and the Palace of the Gods’ people. They were not in a rush anyways.

They didn't have to wait too long. The young men in the purple golden robe and the Taoist robe arrived in the sky. They had been waiting in the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, knowing that strong cultivators had gathered there already.

"Disciples from Celestial Qinling Palace and the Palace of the Gods!" said someone. One of the young men had an extraordinary Qi and the other one was wearing a Taoist robe.

"Qin Zheng from the Celestial Qinling Palace." said the young man in the purple golden robe indifferently. Even though he hadn't broken through to the Huang Qi layer yet, he had an incredible Qi radiating from him.

"Xuan Chen from the Palace of the Gods." said the young man in the Taoist robe.

"Please have a seat!" said a strong cultivator of the Celestial Wen Castle very politely. Qin Zheng and Xuan Chen represented the Celestial Qinling Palace and the Palace of the Gods, so people had to respect them.

Qin Zheng and Xuan Chen sat down before someone asked, "Haven't you see the representative from Yao Ye Island yet?"

"We waited for a few days, but saw nobody, so we came. Did we miss anything?" asked Qin Zheng. Everybody wanted to hear the news from the Everlasting Celestial Emperor's palace.

"Hmph! If they didn't learn anything, then we can't do much either." said someone in a cold way. Qin Zheng and Xuan Chen's eyes twinkled. The nine great celestial castles probably had some clues.

"Wait for the representative of Yao Ye Island and then we'll see." said Qin Zheng indifferently. Nobody minded. After that, everyone started chatting about random topics. Qi Yu Chen was there, and he was a lot stronger than before. On the side of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, Zhou Tian Ruo was staring at Qin Zheng

and Xuan Chen, who were both cultivators at the very top of the Zun Qi layer. He was wondering how strong they really were now.

On the side of the Palace of Medicinal King, there was Ye Sheng, Gu Li, and Xia Tian Fan. They had all come back. Of course, the young people from Celestial Wen Castle were the majority. Apart from Wen Ao Feng, there were two more people. If Lin Feng had been there, he would have recognized two of them: Wen Tian Ge and Wen Ao Xue. They had gone to the Celestial Wen Castle after they parted ways in the desert.

In the distance, a sword whistled, causing everybody to turn around. There was a silhouette riding that sword: “Lin Feng!”

When Qi Yu Chen heard that name, he suddenly opened his eyes, and dazzling lights flashed in his eyes. He immediately released empty space energies at Lin Feng.

Zhou Tian Ruo released golden holy Qi as well.

Qi Yun Sheng looked at Lin Feng and frowned. Emperor Shen Yu had taken Lin Feng away back then and had agreed with Emperor Ni Chen to organize some battles in the future, but Emperor Ni Chen hadn't told them what Emperor Shen Yu's social status was. But now Lin Feng had surprisingly come back.

The old man from the Palace of Medicinal King suddenly stood up and glared at Lin Feng with murder in his eyes. That cultivator of the Zun Qi layer had dared demand that he return Emperor Yu's item, he had also said he'd go to their Palace of Medicinal Kings someday and make them regret. He was extremely arrogant and surprisingly, he had dared come back.

Lin Feng put away his sword and glanced at the crowd standing in the sky. He could sense that many people were looking at him in a cold way at that moment.

“Long time no see, everybody.” said Lin Feng indifferently and calmly.

The old man shook his hand and vines appeared in the sky, which quickly surrounded Lin Feng, “You dared to come back!”

“Old dude, you better be respectful!” said Lin Feng to the old man.

“Didn’t Emperor Shen Yu come with you?” asked the old man, trying to understand what was going on. He was afraid of Emperor Shen Yu and Lin Feng looked quite indifferent at that moment, as if he hadn’t feared him.

“Why would we have come together?” said Lin Feng. The old man still didn’t understand. He didn’t think about Yao Ye Island because Yao Ye Island’s population was composed of beasts and Lin Feng was a human being.

“Well then, I will cripple your cultivation!” said the old man indifferently. Everybody observed calmly. They wanted to see why Lin Feng looked so indifferent in the face of such overwhelming hate.

“You old retard, try if you dare!” said Lin Feng, taking out the Yao Ye Amulet and showing it to the old man.

“Yao Ye Amulet!” the old man incredulously.

“You’re the one from Yao Ye Island?” asked Qin Zheng to Lin Feng.

“Yao Ye Island, Lin Feng!” said Lin Feng indifferently.

Was Emperor Shen Yu from Yao Ye Island?

No wonder Emperor Ni Chen was so polite to Emperor Shen Yu. They were both great imperial forces.

Now that Lin Feng represented Yao Ye Island, they couldn’t attack him. He had the same social status as Qing Di Mountain. Besides, Yao Ye Island’s cultivators were all powerful beasts, each of whom were more aggressive and brutal than human beings. Even Qing Di Mountain didn’t dare offend Yao Ye Island.

“You old retard, you’re still not removing yourself!” said Lin Feng. Then the old man immediately recalled his vines.

“You old retard, next time, don’t blame me for not having warned you. Be polite! Otherwise, Yao Ye Island will dispatch their strongest cultivators to deal with you.” threatened Lin Feng

The old man was furious that Lin Feng kept calling him an old retard, but he couldn’t do anything. Now he couldn’t stop thinking about when Lin Feng had told him that he’d make the Palace of Medicinal King pay someday!

He had always felt uncomfortable when thinking about that and now it seemed more and more possible.

# Chapter 1562: Each Person Has Their Own Malicious Intentions

---

“Do you regret?” asked Lin Feng. Nobody knew if he was talking to the Palace of Medicinal King or to Celestial Qi Castle.

For the old man, it meant: do you regret having humiliated my teacher back then? If you had helped him once, what would have happened?

For Celestial Qi Castle, it meant: do you regret having controlled me? Of course, for Emperor Dong and Emperor Qi, it meant something different for the hatred between them was too deep.

Then for Zhou Tian Xiao and Zhou Tian Ruo, it meant something else.

And there was still the Celestial Si Kong Castle!

Lin Feng laughed deeply. He would get his revenge someday. But he had to rely on Yao Ye Island for now.

“He will definitely die!” thought the old man from the Palace of Medicinal Kings. Of course, they couldn’t kill him in the open. Lin Feng had the Yao Ye Amulet, if the Palace of Medicinal King killed Lin Feng directly, Yao Ye Island would kill them.

“I wouldn’t have thought that Yao Ye Island would send a human being this time.” said Qin Zheng smiling. Besides this shocking news, it seemed like there were tensions between that human being and the nine great celestial castles.

“Lin Feng!” shouted someone at that moment. Lin Feng turned around and saw Zhou Tian Ruo releasing golden holy Qi. He had become a cultivator at the very top of the Zun Qi layer, and he still wanted to kill Lin Feng.

“What’s up?” asked Lin Feng. He had humiliated him three times already. Did he want to be humiliated a fourth time? Lin Feng’s



target wasn't even Zhou Tian Ruo anymore, it was Zhou Tian Xiao.

"Let's fight!" said Zhou Tian Ruo.

Lin Feng looked at him in a disdainful way and said calmly, "The loser will die, and the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness can't prevent me from killing you. If you dare, come here."

"The loser will die!" Zhou Tian Ruo's heart was pounding. That kind of bet was too dangerous, and Zhou Tian Ruo didn't want to gamble it all right now.

He felt humiliated because he didn't dare to fight. He clenched his fists, Lin Feng had destroyed his determination once again.

"You've always been a crappy cultivator in my eyes, so don't try and fight against me anymore. You're just way too weak." said Lin Feng, now sounding like a demon. Lin Feng's demonic voice was trying to influence Zhou Tian Ruo's determination.

"You've always been a crappy cultivator in my eyes, you're just way too weak." those words resonated in Zhou Tian Ruo's brain. He would never forget that, he was shaking with anger.

"Zhou Tian Ruo!" shouted Zhou Tian Xiao extremely loudly. He then said, "Don't let anyone influence your determination!"

Zhou Tian Ruo's brain felt like it was going to explode. Two voices resonated in his brain. He gradually calmed down. He looked at Lin Feng in a cold way, but he knew that he couldn't do much. Lin Feng's powers could even influence his determination.

Lin Feng smiled at Zhou Tian Ruo mockingly.

"You're so weak!" said Lin Feng in a low voice. His voice didn't contain any demon-cursing strength this time, but it still hurt.

"Pfew..." Zhou Tian Ruo closed his eyes and took a deep breath. He tried to cheer himself up by telling himself that he couldn't let Lin Feng influence him no matter what. Lin Feng had just broken through to the eighth Zun Qi layer, even though he was

terrifyingly strong, he would also become an emperor soon.

“Lin Feng, come and have a seat.” said a strong cultivator on the side of Celestial Wen Castle.

Lin Feng nodded, he didn't look at Zhou Tian Ruo again.

“Lin Feng, long time no see!” said Wen Ao Xue and Wen Tian Ge smiling. What a surprise, they had met again, and Lin Feng was a member of Yao Ye Island.

“Long time no see!” said Lin Feng smiling. Even though his friends had now gone to the Celestial Wen Castle, Lin Feng didn't need to feel uncomfortable.

But the relation between Lin Feng and the Celestial Wen Castle was under some strain because Wen Ao Feng was Emperor Ni Chen's disciple. Emperor Ni Chen and Emperor Shen Yu had agreed that they'd have a competition at some point, so maybe Lin Feng and Wen Ao Feng would have to fight then.

Wen Ao Feng nodded at Lin Feng. He looked calm, so Lin Feng also greeted him.

“Since the representative of Yao Ye Island arrived, we can get back to our topic which is the Everlasting Celestial Emperor's castle. Many of you say they know nothing, but that's obviously a lie.” said a strong cultivator at that moment. If nobody said anything, how would they find any clues?

“If we don't know anything, what could we tell you! The Qing Di Mountain and the others are here already, so if they ask us, Celestial Qi Castle, they'll also tell you that we know nothing.” said Qi Yun Sheng aggressively.

“What do you think?” asked that strong cultivator to Lin Feng and the others.

“Since they don't know anything, what can we do?” said Wen Ao Feng smiling indifferently.

The crowd was furious. Wen Ao Feng was from Qing Di Mountain and from Celestial Wen Castle, so he only thought of his personal interests.

The crowd looked at Qin Zheng, his eyes were twinkling as he asked Lin Feng, “Lin Feng, you’re the last one to arrive. Do you have any ideas?”

“People could disperse and search for clues under the territory of the nine great celestial castles, and if anybody finds something, they can yell it.” said Lin Feng.

“I agree with Lin Feng. Everybody can choose a palace and search. Does everybody else agree?” asked Qin Zheng smiling. Lin Feng’s idea wasn’t bad. Clues about the Everlasting Celestial Emperor’s Palace were bound to be found inside the buffer zone.

“Qi Yun Sheng, what do you think?” asked someone.

“You’re welcome to Celestial Qi Castle!” said Qi Yun Sheng indifferently. The other castles weren’t happy about allowing others in, but they couldn’t refuse.

“Do you want to rest in our castles for a few days?” asked Wen Ao Feng to Lin Feng, Qin Zheng, and Xuan Chen.

Qin Zheng and Xuan Chen nodded, but Lin Feng said, “I like Celestial Qi Castle, and I’m sure that Celestial Qi Castle will protect me because they’re strong.”

“Bastard!” thought some people from Celestial Qi Castle. Not only couldn’t they kill Lin Feng, but they also had to protect him.

## Chapter 1563: A Trap

---

The members from Celestial Qi Castle and the Palace of Medicinal King hated Lin Feng, they even wanted to plot against him to kill him, but in just one sentence, Lin Feng had destroyed all their plans.

There were countless islands filled with terrifying beasts, and they listened to the Yao Ye Amulet. If it rang, a terrifying army of beasts would intervene. Even if the nine great celestial castles joined hands, Yao Ye Island was still stronger than them. Even Qing Di Mountain didn't dare offend them.

But the Palace of Medicinal King thought differently. When they heard that Lin Feng wanted to stay there, the white-bearded old man's eyes twinkled. If they managed to kill Lin Feng while he stayed inside Celestial Qi Castle's territory, then they couldn't be blamed! Of course, it was easier said than done.

Qi Yun Sheng noticed that the Palace of Medicinal King was looking at them, so he looked at them in a cold way too.

"Do as you wish, you can go anywhere you want." Lin Feng stood up and smiled. Then he appeared in front of the people from Celestial Qi Castle. He glanced at the people he knew, especially Emperor Dong and Emperor Qi who had come back.

"Please!" said Qi Yun Sheng smiling at Lin Feng.

"Dear friends, I trust that you have been doing well since we last met." said Lin Feng to the two emperors. Apart from Lin Feng, many other people chose to go to Celestial Qi Castle and followed.

---

Lin Feng was back in Celestial Qi Castle, this time, with another social status. Last time, he was controlled, but this time he was from an imperial force and he didn't need to hide.

When they arrived in Celestial Qi Castle, Jin Chen Jun oversaw

protecting Lin Feng. He brought Lin Feng to a courtyard and said, “Lin Feng, you stay here, and if anything happens, call me. I’ll be outside guarding.”

“Thank you, Jin Chen Jun!” said Lin Feng smiling. They were both very hypocritical at that moment as if they were friends. Jin Chen Jun couldn’t wait to kick Lin Feng out of Celestial Qi Castle’s territory. It was too difficult to protect Lin Feng and be polite to him.

Lin Feng didn’t offend him though. After entering the courtyard, he started sleeping and practicing cultivation in his dream. Apart from having understood force and abstruse energies, Lin Feng had broken through to the eighth Zun Qi layer.

But cultivation level wasn’t the most important thing, abstruse energies and force were. He had to improve his abstruse energies to the fullest and then it would be a good idea to break through to the ninth Zun Qi layer. Finally, he’d understand cosmic energies and have them fuse together with his body.

Learning how to control cosmic energies and making them fuse together with one’s body was a very complex process. It was different from understanding cosmic energies. Understanding cosmic energies didn’t mean a cultivator was going to break through to the Huang Qi layer.

Therefore, force was much more important than cosmic energies because if a cultivator’s force wasn’t multiplied by one thousand, they couldn’t make their cosmic energies fuse together with their body, and then they couldn’t break through to the Huang Qi layer.

As long as the two requirements were met, and the proper cultivation level was reached, a cultivator could break through to the Huang Qi layer. Of course, it was rare to have a force multiplied by one-thousand. Most people first broke through to the ninth Zun Qi layer and then fulfilled the two requirements.

However, Lin Feng was an exception, cultivators at the very top

of the Zun Qi layer already feared him, a cultivator of the eighth Zun Qi layer. Even Zhou Tian Ruo didn't dare fight against him.

It became dark outside, but Celestial Qi Castle was quite agitated because of their guests they were guarding.

Sometime that night, a certain place inside Celestial Qi Castle suddenly twinkled, and dazzling lights appeared. The sky was condensing there as it turned into a celestial palace. It looked like a castle from the sky. A gigantic word also appeared on the palace: Everlasting!

People from Celestial Qi Castle were astonished, the Everlasting Emperor's Palace!

“Boom!”

“Boom boom boom!” a terrifying Qi invaded the sky above Celestial Qi Castle's territory. Some houses broke apart as several people threw themselves at the castle.

“What's going on?” thought Qi Yun Sheng, rising in the air. People burst into an uproar, and the atmosphere was chaotic. Qi Yun Sheng didn't understand what was going on. Why had the Everlasting Emperor's Palace appeared there? Who had broken the restricted strength on the bronze plate while on top of Celestial Qi Castle's territory?

Jin Chen Jun observed the palace and watched as people were rushing over. He frowned, what was going on? Why was everybody rushing over to Celestial Qi Castle? Why had the palace appeared there? It was as if it had been planned.

“The situation is out of control!” thought Jin Chen Jun. People were already fighting everywhere, buildings were collapsing, one after the other.

“Oh no!” Jin Chen Jun suddenly turned around and rose up in the air. The golden lights were going to seal those buildings.

However, at the same time, terrifying cosmic energies invaded

the sky. It was as if a gigantic hand was grabbing at the sky.

“Kaboom!” the golden lights broke apart as a dark shadow appeared and landed next to Jin Chen Jun.

In the distance, there was a great battle so many of the guards were already there, but nobody knew about the battle which had started on Jin Chen Jun’s side.

A gigantic hand descended and moved towards Jin Chen Jun. Even though it couldn’t kill Jin Chen Jun, it was enough to make him fly away.

“Someone wants to kill Lin Feng!” shouted Jin Chen Jun. He turned into a golden light as flew ahead but was assaulted by the gigantic hand again. This time his golden armor broke apart as he was sent flying.

“Someone wants to kill Lin Feng!” Qi Yun Sheng and Qi Yun Xiao heard Jin Chen Jun, but they were rather far away.

# Chapter 1564: Great Emperor's Palace Map

---

“He’s become so strong already.” thought Emperor Qi. He possessed force which was multiplied by one-thousand, which meant that when Emperor Qi attacked him with his own force, it had no effect.

Emperor Qi looked at Lin Feng’s disdainful expression and groaned coldly. On the inside though, he was shivering. He lowered his head, looking at his bleeding hand. Lin Feng could already injure emperors!

Lin Feng was far from being able to defeat an emperor when they used their full strength, but then again, had Lin Feng used his full strength before? Emperor Qi didn’t know how strong Lin Feng was any longer.

Those who surrounded them didn’t know it either, but they had watched as Lin Feng had injured an emperor. Emperor Qi was a weak emperor, but no matter, he was an emperor and controlled cosmic energies.

“No wonder he dares to act that aggressively and arrogantly. He’s right, Zhou Tian Ruo can’t compete with him at all.” thought the crowd. Lin Feng moved away from Emperor Qi and looked at the battles around him.

People continued fighting all around. Lin Feng quickly found out that there wasn’t only two bronze plates, as another palace had appeared. The three palaces were connected before they turned into a castle. There was a golden map forming below that castle.

Many people stopped fighting as the map appeared. When the castles condensed into one, they already knew what was going on.

“The Map of the Everlasting Great Emperor’s Palace!” they thought. That that map might tell them where the great empire was, so everybody was fixedly staring at it with greed. Even the



fighting with Celestial Qi Castle had stopped.

“That’s a surprise!” thought Lin Feng. Those who had the bronze plates hadn’t thought they’d connect and create a palace. The third one had taken out his bronze plate only because he had seen that the first two were connected.

Besides, the map wasn’t complete. A part of the map was missing, indicating that two bronze plates were still missing.

“Everybody, who has the fourth and fifth bronze plates? Please take them out.” said someone. Without the other ones, it was impossible to know where to go.

“I wouldn’t have thought that the bronze plate really had something to do with the palace.” thought Lin Feng. The old man probably didn’t know that either, otherwise he wouldn’t have sold it that easily.

Lin Feng was wondering whether he should take it out or not.

“I have the fourth one.” said someone at that moment, it was Qi Yun Xiao.

“Since you have the fourth one, take it out.” said someone.

“Indeed, maybe then the whole thing will appear.”

Qi Yun Xiao looked at them in a cold way and said indifferently, “People attacked Celestial Qi Castle, my fellow members, and myself. Besides, some people plotted against Lin Feng. If I take out the fourth bronze plate, how can I be sure that nothing will happen to us?”

“What do you want?” asked someone.

“Everybody move back ten thousand meters. Only members from Celestial Qi Castle can stay here. If someone moves when I take it out, I’ll take it back.” said Qi Yun Xiao.

“Qi Yun Xiao, you just want to take the map for yourself!”

“What if you take the plate back after having seen and

memorized the map?” said some people. They were not satisfied because they weren’t convinced that they could see the map from that far away.

“Since you don’t trust me, there is a second option. The other owners of the bronze plates can take them back and we can agree on a place to meet. That way, nobody will cause any more trouble for Celestial Qi Castle.” said Qi Yun Xiao, gazing over the crowd.

“No.”

“If Celestial Qi Castle doesn’t take out the bronze plate, then...!” said some people around him. Nobody was ready to give up.

“Bzzz!” However, at that moment, a strong wind started blowing as someone pulled away their bronze plate.

“How dare you!” said the crowd. They all followed the bronze plate. They instantly forgot about the map as they chased that person.

Qi Yun Xiao smiled coldly. That person had understood what he meant. The owners could take their bronze plates back and they could agree on another date to look at the map. What it meant was: the owners and him alone without everyone else! Not many people had reacted when he had said that though.

At that moment, some Qi suddenly emerged around Lin Feng, making turned around to see some silhouettes surrounding him.

“Eh?” Lin Feng looked at those people. Those people who had been trying to attack him in the dark were all there now.

Those people were all from the nine great celestial castles.

“Everybody stop, you can take the bronze plates.” said an emperor from the Celestial Wen Castle. Everybody stopped when he said that. There were already many corpses lying on the ground around him, so they knew they couldn’t compete with him.

“Take out the bronze plate again and show the map to everyone.”

said a strong cultivator from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness. Two bronze plates had already been returned, so now all they needed was one more.

Three bronze plates connected again. Then those people looked at Qi Yun Xiao and said, “Brother Qi, take out your bronze plate.”

“Since everybody is here, why not?” said Qi Yun Xiao smiling. He walked forwards and threw his bronze plate. The fourth light appeared, and the four bronze plates connected. Although the map appeared again, it still wasn’t complete.

The crowd looked at the map, the part which was missing in the center seemed to be an important part.

“Impossible!” suddenly, the white-bearded emperor’s face turned pale. How?

# Chapter 1564: Watch your words

---

Qi Yun Sheng and Qi Yun Xiao started running like mad men. He also used empty space cosmic energy to move even faster.

But with that time, even if they were fast, a medium-level emperor could easily kill a Zun cultivator.

At that moment, many buildings were already ruined. The dark silhouette glanced around but didn't see Lin Feng. However, he smiled coldly, was it useful to hide underground?

“Bzzz!” a gigantic hand descended from the sky and crashed the ground. Lin Feng was hit by that attack, causing him to shake violently.

But then, Lin Feng disappeared again. The strong cultivator was surprised: a holy weapon. Lin Feng had an empty space holy weapon which allowed him to reappear a few hundreds of meters away.

To that cultivator, such a distance was nothing, but the problem was he didn't have any more time with Qi Yun Xiao quickly arriving.

“Piss off!” a beam of light caused the sky to shake. Qi Yun Sheng and Qi Yun Xiao had attacked at the same time. The enemy released force which quickly surrounded Lin Feng, and then he ran towards him.

“Try if you dare!” shouted Qi Yun Xiao furiously. He punched the air in that direction, causing the sky to shake even more.

The enemy landed in front of Lin Feng, Lin Feng couldn't move because of the force. Qi Yun Sheng and Qi Yun Xiao's faces turned deathly pale. Even though they hoped that Lin Feng would die at some point, they didn't hope he'd die there.

“Die!” said that dark silhouette releasing sharp sword energies towards Lin Feng. He was already smiling.

“Wind Chant!” a strong wind started blowing, enveloping Lin Feng, and blowing him away. The enemy was discountenanced, his smile was rigid. He was gone? How was that possible?

He raised his head and he saw Lin Feng near Qi Yun Sheng and Qi Yun Xiao. With his force, which was multiplied by one-thousand, Lin Feng still possessed such terrifying speed. It meant that Lin Feng’s force was probably already multiplied by one thousand.

“Why didn’t you use your real strength?” asked Qi Yun Xiao in a cold way. That person hadn’t used real skills or techniques, just pure cosmic energies. They probably didn’t want to be recognized.

Many people rushed over, all of them were strong cultivators from Celestial Qi Castle. However, they had a strange smile which made Qi Yun Xiao and the others feel uncomfortable.

Cosmic strength condensed into a sword, as before, it was pure cosmic energy. That cultivator used no skills or techniques.

“Protect Lin Feng!” shouted Qi Yun Xiao. An emperor instantly protected Lin Feng, and Lin Feng ran back. The person who wanted to kill him was a medium-level emperor, so Lin Feng had to gain as much distance as he could.

“Bzzz!” A terrifying strength suddenly surrounded Lin Feng, drenching him in a cold sweat.

“Be careful!” shouted someone at Lin Feng. A cultivator of the ninth Zun Qi layer had released sword energies behind Lin Feng, which were now moving towards him. It was a cultivator from Celestial Qi Castle, but he wanted to kill him.

“You must want to die!” shouted Jin Chen Jun while releasing his own force. That person suddenly couldn’t move anymore.

Then, his body exploded as he tried to break free. Why were people from Celestial Qi Castle attacking Lin Feng? They were committing suicide by attacking Lin Feng!

At the same time, more lights condensed as the Everlasting

Celestial Emperor's palace appeared again.

The crowd was going insane. There were battles everywhere, and even more people were coming to Celestial Qi Castle. Celestial Qi Castle couldn't stop them either, they were all emperors.

"Celestial Qi Castle, you said you knew nothing and now, two Everlasting Bronze Plates have appeared inside Celestial Qi Castle! You lied!"

"Celestial Qi Castle's people know everything!" said someone else.

"Indeed, especially Qi Yun Sheng, he's a cultivator from Qing Di Mountain. He despises people, so we should capture and interrogate him!"

Many strong cultivators gathered together, causing the faces of Celestial Qi Castle's people pale.

"Kill them! Or capture them and force the truth out of them!" said people unceasingly. Celestial Qi Castle had lost control.

Emperor Dong and Emperor Qi were watching the battles, speechlessly.

Lin Feng glanced around, looking at all the battles. People weren't just attacking him, they were also attacking Celestial Qi Castle as well. Killing him while he was on Celestial Qi Castle's territory was a good way to kill two birds with one stone.

"Protect Lin Feng!" shouted Qi Yun Xiao. At that moment, he looked furious. It was impossible to create a complete massacre on their territory because their cultivators were strong, but Lin Feng was too weak and too easy to target.

When he said that, more sword energies moved towards Lin Feng. Someone was attacking him again.

Lin Feng suddenly turned around and a force multiplied by one-thousand surrounded his enemy's body. In a flash, that person had

the sensation that they were trapped in mud.

Lin Feng moved like the wind and punched his opponent. There were a few cracking sounds before their organs imploded.

“Come to the middle!” said Jin Chen Jun to Lin Feng. They surrounded Lin Feng, limiting the angles that enemies could approach from. One of their people arrived near Lin Feng faster than everybody else.

“Kaboom!” Lin Feng condensed demonic Qi in his fist and punched the enemy’s head, causing it to explode.

“You...” Jin Chen Jun looked at Lin Feng in a cold way.

Lin Feng glanced at him and said, “I don’t trust people from Celestial Qi Castle. If anyone gets too close, I’ll kill them!”

Some people from Celestial Qi Castle had already attacked him, so how could he feel safe? They could still protect him but from far away.

“You don’t know how to differentiate good from bad, you should die!” said Emperor Qi in a cold way.

Lin Feng glanced at Emperor Qi while jumping towards him. Suddenly, sword lights appeared.

Emperor Qi’s facial expression suddenly changed, Cosmic energies condensed in front of him, but the sword energies continued moving towards him. He raised his hand to block the sword with his flesh which contained cosmic energies.

However, Lin Feng moved too quickly. Emperor Qi was surprised and moved back, at the same time, force surrounded Lin Feng’s body. But even then, he continued moving like the wind while threatening Emperor Qi’s life.

Emperor Qi joined his hands and explosion sounded. The cosmic energies broke apart and blood dripped from his hand.

“Last time, I warned the people from the Palace of Medicinal

Kings, and now I'm warning you. When you talk to me in the future, you'd better watch your words!" yelled Lin Feng. Emperor Qi was speechless!



# Chapter 1566: All The Everlasting Bronze Plates!

---

“What’s going on?” thought the crowd as they stared at the map. They looked at it, but they didn’t recognize it at all. It wasn’t in Qing Di Mountain’s territory.

The medium-level emperors from the nine great celestial castles recognized that place, but they didn’t look happy at all. It was that place, they couldn’t go there, there were too many strong cultivators there. People from the nine great celestial castles all remained silent, even the members from Qing Di Mountain remained silent.

“Maybe that there is one more bronze plate, maybe it’s still not complete!” thought the crowd, but they already knew that it wasn’t possible. Since the palace was so far away though, why had the five bronze plates showed that place? Had the Everlasting Celestial Emperor died there?

“Everybody, who has the fifth bronze plate?” asked a strong cultivator from the Palace of Medicinal Kings glancing around. “If you have the fifth Everlasting Bronze Plate, we’ll have the complete map and we’ll be able to find the palace.”

Everyone remained silent. Lin Feng’s eyes were twinkling because he had the fifth one, but he didn’t know what to do.

“If you don’t have it, the nine great celestial castles can take the plates back and when the fifth one appears, we can meet again.” said the white-bearded old man. He wanted to get all the bronze plates for himself.

“I don’t agree. If you take take them and the fifth bronze plate appears, we won’t know about it.” said someone in a cold way.

“Indeed, but maybe you have the fifth one!”

“I think that the nine great celestial castles should control the

Everlasting Bronze Plates, that's the best solution. Otherwise, they could get lost, and who'd be responsible if that happened?" asked a strong cultivator from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness. The nine great celestial castles were finally joining hands.

"I don't agree." said Lin Feng indifferently. Many people looked at him. Even though he wasn't an emperor yet, he had the Yao Ye Amulet, so he represented Yao Ye Island.

Lin Feng looked at everybody in a calm and serene way as he said, "I'm the one who should manage them."

"He?!" the crowd was flabbergasted!

"Lin Feng, give us one single reason to let you manage the bronze plates." said someone.

"After I take the bronze plates, I'll stay inside Celestial Qi Castle, and I won't leave at all. Everyone can observe me, and with my strength, if the last one appears, I won't be able to run away or leave with all of them. Therefore, it'd be the safest choice." explained Lin Feng indifferently.

Indeed, if the nine great celestial castles took the bronze plates, nobody would be able to control them, but if Lin Feng had them and the last one appeared, he wouldn't be able to escape with them.

"Besides, my social status is special, if I manage the bronze plates, the nine great celestial castles will have to protect me and ensure that I'm safe at all times. If anyone attacks me at night like tonight, the nine great celestial castles will all be held responsible. Later, if someone has the fifth bronze plate, they'll come, and we'll do everything together. Isn't the plan perfect?"

Everybody seemed pensive. His idea wasn't bad.

"If the nine great celestial castles don't agree, it's only because they want to keep the map for themselves." said Lin Feng, coldly

glancing at the white-bearded old man and smiling coldly. He then looked at Qin Zheng and Xuan Chen and said, “I promise in front of the strong cultivators from Celestial Qinling Palace, the Palace of the Gods, Qing Di Mountain, and Yao Ye Island that I will take care of the bronze plates and that when the fifth one appears, I’ll ask my Masters from Yao Ye Island to tell everyone about it!”

“Why you? Why not Wen Ao Feng from the Qing Di Mountain? Or Qin Zheng? Or Xuan Chen?” said someone in a cold way.

“Oh, I don’t mind either, we can all switch every two hours and the four of us can manage the bronze plates.” said Lin Feng as he smiled in a cold way.

“No need. Brother Lin, you’re right, let Brother Lin manage the plates. I will inform the teachers.” said Wen Ao Feng. He thought that it would be the same if he took it, or Lin Feng, or if any of them took it.

“I don’t mind either.” said Qin Zheng and Xuan Chen. Lin Feng wasn’t going to escape no matter what.

“Thank you for your help, Brother Lin!” everybody then started leaving. Even though many people weren’t happy about it, they had no choice.

Lin Feng slowly walked forwards and smiled at the people from the nine great celestial castles. Then he said indifferently, “A medium-level emperor tried to kill me before. Some of you might still think that since I’m in Celestial Qi Castle, you can easily kill me and have them take the fall. However, I have to warn everybody, I now have four bronze plates, if anyone tries to hurt or kill me, Celestial Qi Castle won’t be the only group held responsible! All the nine great celestial castles will be held responsible.”

“I hope that it won’t happen again, therefore, I want the nine great celestial castles to send some extra strong cultivators to protect Lin Feng.” said Qi Yun Xiao in a cold way.

“We can talk about that together.” said Lin Feng, taking the bronze plates. None of those people knew that Lin Feng had bought the last plate over a year ago.

Lin Feng now had the fifth bronze plates, so he could see the complete map if he wanted to.

Lin Feng took out a talisman, and a silhouette appeared, it was Emperor Shen Yu.

“Lin Feng!” shouted Emperor Shen Yu after he saw Lin Feng.

“Uncle Shen, the palace appeared, but some medium-level emperors tried to kill me. If I stay here any longer, they’ll continue to try and take my life.” explained Lin Feng.

Emperor Shen Yu’s eyes flashed, and he nodded, “Wait for me. If anything happens to you, remind them that all the animal emperors from Yao Ye Island will come and kill them all.”

“Say hi to all the beasts for me!” said Lin Feng smiling. Then, Emperor Shen Yu’s silhouette disappeared, leaving the crowd furious. They wouldn’t have thought that he was so cruel. They hadn’t thought that Lin Feng had so much support, he even called Emperor Shen Yu “Uncle”. They couldn’t offend Lin Feng any more.

“Jin Chen Jun, bring me to another place.” said Lin Feng to Jin Chen Jun.

Jin Chen Jun looked at Qi Yun Xiao who nodded. Qi Yun Xiao nodded at Lin Feng and said, “Lin Feng, come with me.”

After Qi Yun Xiao left with Lin Feng, he glanced at several strong cultivators, asking them to follow. Lin Feng felt like a guest of honor!

# Chapter 1567: Everlasting Celestial Emperor

---

Lin Feng went to his room and closed his eyes. He already had the four bronze plates, so he didn't care about the other people anymore. He had called Emperor Shen Yu so that nobody would touch him anymore.

Outside, the atmosphere became calm. Lin Feng unconsciously released his celestial book spirit and put the five bronze plates in his demonic territory. Then, he recalled his celestial book spirit. His spirit was the best ring he ever had. Nobody could find anything once it was in his spirit.

At that moment, his godly awareness appeared inside his demonic territory. He looked at the five bronze plates as they condensed into a palace. Under the palace, there was a map, and it was a complete map.

“What a strange map. I don't know what that place is.” thought Lin Feng. He had only been to a few places so far in the great world. He couldn't know the place on the map, but he had the impression that it was a special place. There were four distinct parts which, at the same time, looked like one. Apart from that, there was a dazzling place on the map which was still blurry.

Lin Feng used his godly awareness to memorize the map. He didn't know what that place was, but Uncle Yu probably did. Lin Feng just had to wait patiently.

“Boom!” at that moment, the palace disappeared, and a seventy-year old man's silhouette appeared.

Lin Feng was surprised. That silhouette had appeared inside his memories, so was it a silhouette created from the connection of the five Everlasting Bronze Plates?

That old man looked at Lin Feng.

“Are you the Everlasting Celestial Emperor, Master?” asked Lin

Feng. That was a thread of godly awareness which still existed inside the bronze plates.

When the old man heard Lin Feng, he nodded and said, “And what is your name?”

“Lin Feng!” said Lin Feng bowing. He hadn’t thought he’d see the old man’s godly awareness.

“Those who enter my palace will die if they’re not lucky, so let me ask you something, would you go knowing that or not?” asked the Everlasting Celestial Emperor indifferently.

Lin Feng frowned.

“Master, what is the probability?” asked Lin Feng.

“One person in a hundred will survive.” said the old man calmly.

“I give up. Choose someone else.” said Lin Feng. He wasn’t going to gamble his life at this stage.

“Those who enter will inherit my everything, including all my teachings. Are you sure you wouldn’t go?” asked the old man again.

“I’m not going.” said Lin Feng refusing. Even without the Everlasting Great Emperor’s palace, he’d have many other great opportunities to become a peerless cultivator. It wasn’t worth it.

“Alright, you’ve passed my test. Good luck.” said the old man indifferently. Then, he turned into a light and penetrated Lin Feng’s brain.

Lin Feng shook as memories swamped his brain. Suddenly, Lin Feng smiled wryly. What a mysterious person.

“Before dying, the great emperor put his godly awareness in many bronze plates which each broke into five pieces, when you connect the five pieces, you find a map and the emperor’s godly awareness condenses, making him reappear. The bronze plates don’t just exist in the nine great celestial castles!” whispered Lin

Feng.

In that great continent, there were many places like the nine great celestial castles. If they found the five bronze plates and assemble them, they could also find the map and see the emperor's godly awareness. His godly awareness was one of the keys.

Was that part of the process of which the emperor sought his descendants after his death? If it was, many people had the chance to become descendants and Lin Feng was one of them. Those people could already find the place where the palace was. Of course, in those other places, maybe those people hadn't found the bronze plates yet.

Anything was possible.

"Bronze plates!" Lin Feng frowned and smiled wryly. The five bronze plates were on the ground, but nothing happened. There were just five bronze plates which looked rather ordinary. The map wouldn't even appear anymore.

"How can I explain that?" thought Lin Feng smiling and shaking his head. People would think he destroyed the bronze plates on purpose.

Lin Feng didn't think too much about it before he fell back to sleep. He practiced cultivation in his dream. Since he had received the emperor's godly awareness, he'd have to go and see the palace, otherwise, this would have been a waste. He had to get stronger before he left though.

In his dream, he spent a night, on the second day, Emperor Ni Chen arrived and called him to wake him up.

That was the Qing Di Mountain's territory so of course Emperor Ni Chen was the first one to arrive. Since he was there, he wanted to see the map for himself.

Many people were gathered in a courtyard inside Celestial Qi Castle as they hadn't left. First, they had talked of the palace, and

then they had heard that Emperor Ni Chen would come, so they had waited for him.

Lin Feng slowly walked through the courtyard. It was the second time he saw Emperor Ni Chen and he looked just as strong as the year and a half before.

“Master, Emperor Ni Chen!” said Lin Feng calmly and politely while bowing.

Back then, he had thought Emperor Ni Chen would help him free his controlled friends, but Emperor Ni Chen had refused him, so he had lost all hope. Then, Emperor Ni Chen and Uncle Yu had agreed to organize a competition, so Lin Feng only had to be polite now.

“You have the Everlasting Bronze Plates, right?” said Emperor Ni Chen indifferently.

“Indeed.” said Lin Feng nodding.

“Alright, show me them.” said Emperor Ni Chen. It sounded normal for him. Lin Feng had the plates, so he had to show them to him.

“I think we should wait for Yao Ye Island, the Celestial Qinling Palace and the Palace of the Gods.” replied Lin Feng. He wouldn’t be able to explain why nothing happened if he took them out now.

Emperor Ni Chen frowned and said: “What are you saying?”

“I think we should wait for Yao Ye Island, the Celestial Qinling Palace and the Palace of the Gods as well.” repeated Lin Feng. Suddenly, Emperor Ni Chen’s facial expression changed drastically. How audacious. People from the nine great celestial castles never contradicted him and Lin Feng dared! He was an extremely strong cultivator from Qing Di Mountain!



# Chapter 1568: Si Xiang City

---

Emperor Ni Chen was dumbstruck, he didn't release any Qi but Lin Feng still felt oppressed.

However, he remained calm and serene and said nothing.

"You think that I can't look at the map?" asked Emperor Ni Chen calmly.

"I never said that. Some things have changed, so I'd prefer to wait for all the strong cultivators from Yao Ye Island and so on to come first." said Lin Feng.

Emperor Ni Chen remained silent and smiled at Lin Feng indifferently, "Very good, let's wait for Emperor Shen Yu." What he was really thinking though was, "His disciple is too stubborn."

"Thank you very much, Master." said Lin Feng to Emperor Ni Chen. Emperor Ni Chen was wondering what Lin Feng meant by "things have changed"? What changed?

"Lin Feng, you said we were waiting for Emperor Shen Yu, but in the meantime will you tell him to tell us the location? You won't forget it, right?" asked the emperor, he wasn't relaxed at all.

"Don't worry. A promise is a promise." said Lin Feng. The crowd was relieved and waited patiently with Lin Feng.

Four hours later, finally, a sonic boom was heard as a strong cultivator arrived. He was wearing the same robe as Qin Zheng, but even though their robes were similar, the newcomer's robe were shinier. It was a strong cultivator from Celestial Qinling Palace.

"Teacher!" said Qin Zheng. The strong cultivator looked at Qin Zheng and asked, "Where's the map?"

Qin Zheng looked at Lin Feng. Then Emperor Ni Chen stood up and said, "The map is with him. His name is Lin Feng and he's

Shen Yu's disciple. He says he wants to wait for everyone before showing us the map."

"Is that so?" asked that person to Lin Feng.

"Indeed." said Lin Feng. His eyes twinkled, as he nodded and said, "Alright, I'm waiting then."

The strong cultivator from the Palace of the Gods met Emperor Shen Yu on the way, so they came together.

"Lin Feng!" shouted Emperor Shen Yu when he saw Lin Feng.

"Brother Shen Yu, finally, you're here!" said Emperor Ni Chen to Emperor Shen Yu. "Your disciple is a good boy!"

Emperor Shen Yu's eyes twinkled, and he said, "I just brought Lin Feng to Yao Ye Island, so he's not my disciple. I can't teach him anything either."

Emperor Shen Yu was very modest. His help had been precious for Lin Feng. Lin Feng understood too many kinds of abstruse energies, so it was funny to hear him say that he couldn't help him.

"Is that so?" asked Emperor Ni Chen indifferently. "Brother Shen Yu, remember what we agreed almost two years ago."

"Ao Feng, come here." said Emperor Ni Chen to Wen Ao Feng, who nodded and jumped forwards. Emperor Shen Yu glanced at Wen Ao Feng and immediately understood. Wen Ao Feng had broken through to the Huang Qi layer.

"My disciple has already become an emperor. Maybe that the battle isn't so necessary anymore." said Emperor Ni Chen indifferently. That's what Shen Yu had told him back then, that he was blind and that a battle wasn't necessary. He had humiliated him because he had refused Lin Feng.

"Ni Chen, I wouldn't have thought that you were so short-sighted." said Shen Yu indifferently glancing at Ni Chen. "One year ago, on the battle stage, Wen Ao Feng was a cultivator at the top of

the Zun Qi layer. I don't know if he hid his force or not, but it was at least multiplied by seven-hundred, and his abstruse energies were all at the top already. He was only one step away from breaking through to the Huang Qi layer. When I took Lin Feng away, his force was multiplied by eight hundred, he had broken through to the seventh Zun Qi layer only, and his abstruse energies weren't even level nine. Wen Ao Feng has broken through to the Huang Qi layer, yes so what? There's nothing dazzling about that. You didn't only bring Wen Ao Feng back to the Qing Di Mountain, what about the others?"

The strong cultivators from Celestial Qinling Palace and the Palace of the Gods didn't interrupt them, they weren't in any hurry to see the map. Rather, they were interested in their conversation.

"You, come and show Shen Yu." said Emperor Ni Chen indifferently. Four-five people came out, including Ye Sheng, Qi Yu Chen, and Zhou Tian Ruo, against whom Lin Feng had already fought.

"Ni Chen, you like competitions. Choose three of them and make them fight against Lin Feng, a battle to death, three against one. If Lin Feng dies, I'll apologize." said Emperor Shen Yu indifferently.

"Three people, together?" the crowd was surprised by his confidence. He was so confident that Lin Feng was that strong? After all, people raised by Emperor Ni Chen couldn't be that weak!

"Interesting!" thought the strong cultivator from Celestial Qinling Palace with his hands crossed on his chest. He looked amused. Emperor Ni Chen was speechless.

But Lin Feng's strength was difficult to evaluate. After all, when he had the strength of the seventh Zun Qi layer, he could already easily defeat Zhou Tian Ruo.

"Stop your bickering, let's see the map instead." said the strong cultivator from the Palace of the Gods.

“It’s not over. We’ll see when that guy breaks through to the Huang Qi layer.” said Emperor Ni Chen in a cold way. He didn’t count Qi Yu Chen and the others because he only considered Wen Ao Feng his real disciple.

“We’re all here now, so just show us already.” said Emperor Ni Chen to Lin Feng in a cold way.

“The bronze plates are useless now.” said Lin Feng. Suddenly, the atmosphere became eerily silent and ice-cold. The Everlasting Bronze Plates had become useless? Was Lin Feng provoking all those strong cultivators?

“But after the Everlasting Bronze Plates became useless, the map penetrated my memory. After you see that, you will understand.” said Lin Feng. He opened his third eye and four threads of godly awareness moved into the four emperors’ third eyes.

Lin Feng had the maps in his memories, of course, he wasn’t going to show them the Everlasting Celestial Emperor’s silhouette. He knew that if he didn’t show them the map, they wouldn’t let him off so easily.

They saw the map but had no way to get into the palace still.

The four emperors’ eyes twinkled. The crowd hadn’t seen anything. What had Lin Feng done?

“Alright, I’m satisfied.” said the strong cultivator from the Celestial Qinling Palace. Ni Chen glanced at Lin Feng, surprisingly, he had the fifth Everlasting Bronze Plates and had fooled everyone to get the four others.

Of course, Emperor Ni Chen wasn’t going to say that, otherwise, Lin Feng would have to tell everyone.

“Lin Feng, don’t forget what you said.” said someone hastily. What had Lin Feng seen?

“Don’t worry, Uncle Yu, I don’t know where that place is, so can you tell them?” said Lin Feng to Emperor Shen Yu.

Shen Yu nodded and said to the crowd: “The map points to Si Xiang City!”

“Si Xiang City!” the crowd was stupefied. “How? Why would the palace be in Si Xiang City? After the Everlasting Celestial Emperor died, his people looked for his palace everywhere, so Si Xiang City was completely upside down. How could it still be there?”

“If you don’t believe me, you can ask them.” said Emperor Shen Yu, pointing at Ni Chen and the other emperors. Then they all nodded back.

“Indeed, it’s in Si Xiang City. We should leave as soon as possible. Si Xiang City is gigantic, so it will take some time to search it.” said the white-bearded old man from the Palace of Medicinal Kings indifferently, but he glanced at Lin Feng. How could they find the actual palace in Si Xiang City? He had the feeling that Lin Feng had hidden something from them.

“I did what I promised. If you want the bronze plates, have them.” said Lin Feng throwing the plates. Then, he said to Emperor Shen Yu, “Uncle Yu, let’s go!”

“Alright.” said Emperor Shen Yu nodding. Then, Emperor Shen Yu and Lin Feng left quickly. If Emperor Shen Yu hadn’t come, Lin Feng wouldn’t have been able to leave. Nobody could prevent them from leaving, but the crowd wasn’t happy.

Now they had to go to Si Xiang City, and the three other emperors wouldn’t tell them much.

# Chapter 1569: Fighting Against the Bestial Emperor Again

---

The news that the Everlasting Emperor's palace was in Si Xiang City spread everywhere. Now everybody now knew about it, however, many people doubted that it was actually there.

Some people even said it was ridiculous. Back then, the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace was one of the most terrifying groups of influence in Si Xiang City. Then, the Everlasting Celestial Emperor had died, and his people had looked for his palace everywhere, but they hadn't found anything. Now, the Everlasting Bronze Plates were pointing to Si Xiang City, exactly where the Everlasting Celestial Emperor used to be.

Lin Feng and Emperor Shen Yu went back to Yao Ye Island. Emperor Shen Yu explained some things to Lin Feng to help him better understand everything which was going on.

The most interesting part was that Emperor Shen Yu had told Lin Feng something else, he had told Lin Feng the real location of the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace.

Back then, in Si Xiang City, the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace wasn't far from a celestial mountain in a forbidden area where people would die if they dared trespass. Lin Feng was speechless, was the Everlasting Emperor's palace really in such a forbidden area? That would explain why the palace hadn't been found.

But even then, Lin Feng still wanted to go to Si Xiang City. He wanted to explore the world. If the place was really dangerous, he wouldn't risk his life in the end. However, he was determined that he had to take some risks.

Of course, Lin Feng wasn't in a rush. He had to become stronger first.

On Yao Ye Island, in a forest, before a hut, there was a beautiful

girl concocting a potion. Lin Feng was reminded of Mister Xiao. Back then, Mister Xiao was also an amazing doctor, and his medicine could save people's lives. He and his friend couldn't stop performing research, it was their passion.

Even though Yun wasn't a doctor, she loved helping and healing people.

"Lin Feng!" said Mu Yun, smiling in a resplendent way after she saw Lin Feng. There was an old man next to the thatched hut. He was curved but it was as if he had always been like that. He was a fire beast, so his eyes were red like fire.

"Master Huo Jing!" said Lin Feng to the ape.

"Hey." said the ape nodding at Lin Feng. He liked it quiet, so he just stared back at them.

"Yun, I won't be able to come and see you for a while. I need to study for some time. Then, I'll leave again." said Lin Feng. At some point, Yun would look for Lin Feng when he practiced cultivation, she usually brought fruits and medicine to help him.

"Alright, be careful." said Yun smiling in a resplendent way.

"This world is the beasts' world, but it is simpler than the world of humans." said Lin Feng, smiling to Yun in a gentle way. Then, he sat down.

"I think so too. It's perfect for me." said Yun. Lin Feng lied down nonchalantly. Even though that place was good place to practice cultivation, he couldn't stay there. He had to practice in the outside world sometimes and experience to surpass bottlenecks.

Lin Feng remained silent for four hours and rested. Then, he stood up and left. He started practicing cultivation and studying abstruse energies. Cultivation layers were now useless to Lin Feng, even if he broke through to the ninth Zun Qi layer, it wouldn't help him at all. He would have to do that at some point to break through to the Huang Qi layer, but before that, he had to improve

his abstruse energies to level nine.

One month later, a mountain exploded.

“Roar!” the Great Earth Demon Ape roared furiously and released demonic Qi. He violently jumped forwards with incredible speed, the ground collapsing under his feet.

“Boom boom!” a gigantic demonic hand blotted out the sky. In the sky above Lin Feng, an infinite amount of demonic shadows fell like meteorites.

“Wind Chant!” Lin Feng moved like the wind using wind and empty space energies, practically disappearing from site.

“Where are you going!” shouted the Great Earth Demon Ape as he slapped the sky with his almighty palm. His cosmic energies turned into a gigantic Earthen hand and a cage made from Earth appeared.

“Great Earth Destruction!” the cosmic energies turned into a cage, causing the wind to disperse. Lin Feng didn’t stop though.

“Boom boom boom!” the hand crashed onto the ground, leaving a gigantic crater. Demonic Qi rose to the skies as another punch appeared. At the same time, another hand appeared, this one contained aggressive demonic strength which blocked Lin Feng’s path.

“Slash!” sword lights shot out. Then, Lin Feng moved like the wind and dodged the attack again.

“Boom!” The Great Earth Demon Ape trampled the ground, leaving a gigantic footprint crater. He finally stopped and looked at Lin Feng furiously.

“Lin Feng, you’re so fast!” said the Great Earth Demon Ape. Force multiplied by a thousand already had no effect on Lin Feng anymore. Because the Great Earth Demon Ape was an adept at close combat, Lin Feng could counter all his attacks.



With such speed, the Great Earth Demon Ape could only get upset with Lin Feng.

Of course, emperors, even if they were slow, were usually faster than cultivators at the top of the Zun Qi layer. But because the Great Earth Demon Ape was a beast and had better attack than speed, and because Lin Feng was terrifyingly fast, the Great Earth Demon Ape couldn't catch up with Lin Feng in terms of speed.

"It's alright. Now, you can't bully me anymore." said Lin Feng laughing. When he had just arrived on Yao Ye Island, the Great Earth Demon Ape always bullied him, but now he could finally end that!

"I'm done." said the Great Earth Demon Ape taking a breath.

"Hey, buddy, let me try too!" said Lin Feng.

"Boom!" Lin Feng punched the Great Earth Demon Ape's chest, causing lights to spread out in every direction. A terrifying strength almost stunned the Great Earth Demon Ape. He raised his head and looked at Lin Feng's tiny body.

"Boom boom!" The Great Earth Demon Ape kicked Lin Feng, causing him to fly away. The sky shook, and the great ape was pushed back a few steps. Lin Feng's punch was powerful!

The Great Earth Demon Ape raised his head, he couldn't believe it. He smiled at Lin Feng and said, "Little boy, you can go and travel now."

"That's exactly what I intend to do, see you soon, buddy!" Lin Feng's silhouette flickered. He waved at the Great Earth Demon Ape while leaving. The Great Earth Demon Ape had a big smile on his face after thought about how scary Lin Feng was becoming.

# Chapter 1570: Si Xiang City

---

In the sky above a boundless area, there was a gigantic group of people flying in the sky. There were strong winds and beasts too. They all blotted out the sky.

At that moment, there was a sharp sword travelling in the clouds, whistling and emitting blasting sounds as it flew.

It was Lin Feng. He was gazing into the distance as he appreciated just how vast the great world was. If he had been in the small world, he wouldn't have been able to see such varying landscapes. People were sitting on clouds, each of their Qi was incredible. Some of them were even enigmatic and unfathomable cultivators.

Strong cultivators were numerous in the great world, and as Lin Feng became strong, he continued seeing people who were even stronger than him. Someday, he'd definitely stand at the top of the Continent of the Nine Clouds though.

The sword he was riding on was his Tian Ji Sword. It was now even faster than the gigantic sword he had received. Si Xiang City was extremely far from Yao Ye Island. So, he needed to travel as fast as he could. Many strong cultivators had already started their journey to Si Xiang City, but Lin Feng hadn't followed them. He had decided to practice cultivation for a while instead. He had already left Yao Ye Island for a month before he finally reached the sky above Si Xiang City.

Si Xiang City was gigantic, much larger than Ba Huang in the small world. Lin Feng's target destination was the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace, located inside the forbidden area.

Many other people were looking for the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace already. The Everlasting Celestial Emperor's godly awareness had told Lin Feng that he had left many bronze tablets in that world, so there were probably would be more individuals who had a piece of the old man's awareness. Even if

they didn't have five bronze tablets, with just three or four, they could still know that the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace was in Si Xiang City.

According to legends, the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace contained the Everlasting Celestial Emperor's teachings and memories. Many incredibly strong cultivators were attracted by the dream of getting their hands on them. The Everlasting Celestial Emperor's everlasting spells were unfathomable, so much so that some of his disciples had become incredible cultivators themselves. Many of them had even become great emperors!

Of course, Si Xiang City's people didn't fear seeing more tourists or migrants. These immigrants helped contribute to the strength of the city.

If Lin Feng hadn't received the Everlasting Celestial Emperor's godly awareness, he wouldn't have come to Si Xiang City at all. There were countless powerful cultivators who were looking for the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace. There were even many great emperors who were looking for those vestiges. However, the godly awareness had warned Lin Feng about that.

"What a great sword!" said someone at that moment. There were four people, amongst them, there was a beautiful woman who was looking at Lin Feng. She had seen Lin Feng and his Tian Ji Sword, and she was amazed. Lin Feng's sword had great thunder and wind energies. It also had seven colors gleaming from it.

Those people all had swords on their back, making them look like sword cultivators. Therefore, the beautiful woman had noticed Lin Feng particularly.

One of the young men with her looked at Lin Feng and said, "Swords are used to kill people, those who use swords as ornaments shouldn't be called sword cultivators, they also don't deserve to practice sword cultivation!"

"That's your opinion. There are many ways to achieve

enlightenment and there are many ways to practice sword cultivation! Each person is different and will choose different paths in life. What you like isn't necessary applicable to other people." said the girl indifferently. Next to her, there was a young man dressed in black clothes, his eyes were closed as he thought about this. He had an ancient sword resting on his back, sheathed.

"What you say is not groundless, but I've always believed that sword cultivators are killers and not people who try to dazzle." said that young man again. The girl wasn't looking at him anymore though, so he was a bit annoyed. She looked at the young man in black clothes. Ever since he had joined Sword Mountain, she had been interested in him.

"How can you judge a person just by looking at their sword? They say you shouldn't judge a book by its cover." said the girl putting as she brushed her hair away. The one in black clothes still remained silent.

She was annoyed. He didn't pay attention to anyone, it was no wonder that girls liked him, because of his mysteriousness.

"Ruo Xie, open your eyes and tell us what you think!" said the girl to the young man in black clothes. Ruo Xie opened his eyes and asked, "Where?"

"There, that beautiful sword!" said the girl smiling and pointing at the Tian Ji Sword. Ruo Xie turned around and saw the Tian Ji Sword. He was astonished. He looked at the young man in white clothes on the sword, then he suddenly smiled in a resplendent way.

The girl was surprised to see Ruo Xie smile in such a resplendent way. This was a guy who rarely showed any emotion!

"Quick!" said Ruo Xie accelerating and moving at full speed.

"Lin Feng!" shouted a voice. Lin Feng suddenly turned around after he heard that familiar voice.

Lin Feng saw a friend and he smiled back in a resplendent way.

“Ruo Xie!” They were happy to see each other again.

They both stretched out their hands and bumped fists.

“I’m so happy to see you again.” said Ruo Xie, sighing. They hadn’t met for two years now. They were like brothers in the small world, not knowing if the other was still alive.

Lin Feng nodded, he was also happy. Where were the other disciples from Tiantai?

“Lin Feng, how is our teacher?” asked Ruo Xie. He suddenly seemed nervous. Lin Feng and Emperor Yu had left together back then, but Emperor Yu wasn’t with him now, so he was worried.

“We haven’t met each other for one and a half years now, but when we left, he was already cured! With his strength, even in the great world, as long as he’s careful there shouldn’t be any problems.” said Lin Feng. Ruo Xie felt a bit relieved.

“Do you have any news from our fellow disciples?” asked Ruo Xie.

“Ban Ruo, Li Hen, Xing Zhan are being controlled by Celestial Qi Castle.” said Lin Feng.

Ruo Xie looked furious after he heard that. He had escaped from Celestial Qi Castle and had spent a lot of time in the desert. Of course, he knew about the nine great celestial castles, so when things had calmed down, he left and had joined Sword Mountain.

“Ruo Xie, what about you? Do you have any news from our brother Mu Chen?” asked Lin Feng. He was used to calling him Mu Chen.

“He controls soul cosmic energies, so he must be fine. Concerning our second brother, I saw him break free and escape. I don’t know where he went. I have no news from the others though.” said Ruo Xie. He was worried and hoped that everybody

was fine.

“Someday, the eleven disciples of Tiantai will reunite!” said Lin Feng. They had to become stronger if they wanted to annihilate Celestial Qi Castle and save all their friends, including Yuan Fei. Lin Feng wanted to bring Yuan Fei to Yao Ye Island to see all the powerful animals there.

“Lin Feng, what if Tiantai rose in the great world? Then all the disciples would be reunited.” said Ruo Xie. Lin Feng’s eyes twinkled.

Tiantai, in the great world... Rebuild Tiantai!

“In a hundred or a thousand years, we won’t be the only ones who would have come out of the small world. Maybe if Tiantai rises, we’ll be able to recruit some of those rising cultivators and we’ll be able to take control over the small world! That is also our teachers’ dream!” explained Ruo Xie.

# Chapter 1571: Former Site

---

There were eleven disciples in Tiantai, apart from the three who were controlled by Celestial Qi Castle and Ruo Xie, there were six other people from whom they had heard no news. If Tiantai could rise in the great world, they'd have to gather all the disciples.

They'd also need Mu Chen and Emperor Yu.

Besides, Mu Chen also controlled the Watchers and wanted to achieve certain goals with them, including the destruction of the Imperial Assassin Union. They also hoped that the small world could become a free world, removing external forces from controlling them.

"We're not strong enough, so we can't control a group of influence in the great world. We could easily be destroyed by others if we tried. However, I'll keep that in mind. When we become stronger, we can try then." said Lin Feng after having remained silent for a few minutes. Ruo Xie agreed, of course.

"Indeed, I understand." said Ruo Xie nodding.

"Ruo Xie, is that one of your friends from the small world? I wouldn't have thought that you people could be so determined, but it's a good thing. To establish an influential group in the great world, you need a high-level emperor at least. It's a bit too early to talk about that though." said the young man with whom the girl had been talking before.

"Brother Ruo Xie, you're not in the small world anymore." said that young man.

"Thank you very much for your advice." said Ruo Xie calmly. He was talking to Lin Feng and didn't want that young man to join their conversation.

"By the way, where do you practice cultivation these days?" asked the young man to Lin Feng indifferently. "On an island!" Lin

Feng replied.

“You should join Sword Mountain, I see that you’re also a sword cultivator, Sword Mountain is a paradise for sword cultivators. I can even recommend you.” said the girl politely smiling at Lin Feng.

“Sister!” said the young man angrily. He then added, “Sister, people have their own way of practicing cultivation, and the Sword Mountain doesn’t recruit people that easily. It’s not something you do just like that.”

“Trying doesn’t harm anyone.” said the girl.

“Of course, if you want to try and join Sword Mountain, no problem, we really can recommend you, but it still won’t be an easy process.” said the young man smiling at Lin Feng.

“It’s alright but thank you.” said Lin Feng. He didn’t know why that young man was making fun of him, but he didn’t feel like arguing with them.

“Ruo Xie, let’s talk privately.” said Lin Feng to Ruo Xie. Then, both silhouettes flickered, and they moved far away.

“Lin Feng, in this world, people are not like us. It’s much easier to become stronger in this world.” said Ruo Xie calmly. That young man kept provoking Lin Feng because he liked that girl and partly because they were from a small world.

“They haven’t gone through as many hardships as we have and they’re not as wise and mature.” said Lin Feng nodding.

“Indeed, in this world, there’s a kind of pill people take at birth which changes their bodies. Afterwards, it helps them swallow the Qi of the Earth and sky before having even started practicing cultivation. There can even be Tian level babies born in this world. Everybody takes that pill at birth in this world, even if it’s expensive, their elders will find a way to buy it.”

Lin Feng was astonished when he heard Ruo Xie and smiled



wryly. It reminded him of those people in the Celestial Walls Manor who had grown up with an understanding of force, and on top of that they inherited a powerful blood-strength from their ancestors.

Those people were already Tian level cultivators when they were babies, at that time, they were still trying to find themselves. They didn't know what they wanted to become in the future, at the age of fifteen, in the great world, people were already Zun cultivators...

"Apart from that, where are you going now?" asked Ruo Xie to Lin Feng.

"I'm going to the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace." replied Lin Feng. Ruo Xie smiled and said, "You also came for that?"

But Ruo Xie looked nervous and said: "Lin Feng, many disciples from Sword City came here. We're a small group but according to legends I've heard in Sword Mountain, the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace shouldn't have appeared in its former location. We should try some other places and try our luck."

"I've also heard that it could be in the periphery of its former location." said Lin Feng smiling. Ruo Xie nodded and said, "Alright, I'll stay with you, but we shouldn't hope too much."

Then, they both accelerated. Those behind them had to struggle to catch up with them because they were too fast.

"Ruo Xie, where are you going?" asked the girl.

"Great Imperial Everlasting Palace's former location." said Ruo Xie.

The girl frowned, and the young man said mockingly, "Are you insane? Why would the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace be on its former site?"

"I didn't ask you to come." said Ruo Xie indifferently. The young man looked upset as he said to the girl, "Since it's that way, we can

separate from them.”

“Indeed, you can stay alone, I’m going with Ruo Xie!” said the girl. Then she caught up with Ruo Xie and Lin Feng and the young man behind looked even more upset. However, he still chased after them.

One day later, Lin Feng and the others arrived in another place in Si Xiang City. There were gigantic ruined palaces resting in front of them, it looked like a former city.

“The Great Imperial Everlasting Palace’s former site.” thought Lin Feng. Even though there were only ruins, it still looked majestic. Lin Feng could imagine the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace back in the days, lofty, domineering, majestic.

“Back then, the Everlasting Celestial Emperor lived in his own palace, which is the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace we talked about. It disappeared along with the Everlasting Celestial Emperor, though, it used to be here.” said the girl pointing at an empty field. There were ruins all around, but the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace had long since disappeared. All the other palaces around were palaces where his disciples lived.

“I’ve heard that the Everlasting Celestial Emperor fell because of one or several of his disciples. I don’t know whether it’s true or not.” said the girl.

“Sister!” shouted her fellow disciple suddenly. He looked grave and solemn. The girl suddenly stopped talking as if she realized that she had said something she shouldn’t have. Even though the Everlasting Celestial Emperor had fallen, some of his disciples were still alive, and some of them were even terrifying great emperors. They could destroy Sword Mountain entirely if they wished so.

There were many others there with them, all trying to find the same thing.

Lin Feng glanced at the people around them. The Everlasting

Celestial Emperor had fallen for so many years and yet it still attracted so many people. What an honor!

# Chapter 1572: The Forbidden Area of Si Xiang

---

“Lu Yao, people from Sword Mountain came to Si Xiang City too.” said someone in the distance, looking at Ruo Xie and the others. Lu Yao was precisely the young man who kept provoking Lin Feng and Ruo Xie.

“They’re here too!” Lu Yao was surprised.

“Sword Mountain didn’t send any emperors?” asked that person glancing at Lu Yao and Ruo Xie. Apart from Lin Feng, Lu Yao and the others were cultivators of the ninth Zun Qi layer, without any emperors to protect them.

“We came alone, so we don’t know whether Sword Mountain has sent any emperors yet.” said Lu Yao honestly.

“You’re just like us, Lu Yao. We should stick together in case any of the emperors here attack us. What do you think?” asked that person to the team from Sword Mountain. Their team was the same as the team from Sword Mountain: three people, two men and a woman. They had also all broken through to the ninth Zun Qi layer.

“What do you think, sister? Should we stay together? Ruo Xie, what do you think?” asked Lu Yao to the girl and Ruo Xie, but he ignored Lin Feng.

“The two of us are enough.” said Ruo Xie, he wasn’t interested in joining those people. Lu Yao groaned coldly.

“Sister, they don’t care about you, so let’s just go.” said Lu Yao to the girl. Ruo Xie was obviously talking about him and Lin Feng. But he was amused because those two came from a small world and couldn’t be that strong, if they stayed alone, they’d probably be in danger.

“Do you mind if I stay with you?” asked the girl to Ruo Xie and

Lin Feng with a cute face. As Lin Feng and Ruo Xie had said, those people had high cultivation levels but weren't mature at all, she was acting like a kid.

"She can." said Lin Feng to Ruo Xie smiling. That girl was hot, maybe she could become Ruo Xie's girlfriend in the future.

Ruo Xie remained silent but finally nodded, "Alright."

The girl smiled at Lin Feng, "Your sword is very beautiful, what kind of sword is it?"

"Its name is Tian Ji!" replied Lin Feng. Lu Yao looked back at them in a cold way and groaned. He was already with the other group.

"Lin Feng, where are we going to find clues?" asked Ruo Xie. Since they had come all the way to Si Xiang City, they had to try their luck in finding the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace.

"I've heard about a restricted area. Ruo Xie, I think we should go there." said Lin Feng with a glint in his eye. He didn't say that the palace was there, and he didn't even know how to get into the forbidden area anyways. Ruo Xie didn't know either, therefore, they would need to do some reconnaissance.

"I've also heard about a forbidden area. It's very dangerous, even great emperor don't dare go there. It is said that nobody ever comes back once they enter." said the girl nodding. She was also very curious about it.

Ruo Xie didn't mind, he had left Sword Mountain to gain experience.

The three of them all had a map of Si Xiang City, so they knew where to go. When Lu Yao and the others saw the others leave, they were intrigued. Lu Yao said, "We have no clues either, so let's go to the forbidden area too."

The forbidden area wasn't far from the former site of the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace. The entrance was gigantic, but it was

misty, so people could only guess what was inside. It was said that great emperors could make a few steps in and then come back safe, however, as they went further in, even great emperors wouldn't make it out.

Lin Feng and the others stood outside as they looked at the misty entrance. Lin Feng's eyes were twinkling. He had gathered some information about the forbidden area, but everything was the same and nothing was useful. People just said that it was very dangerous and that even great emperors never came back out alive. It was difficult to imagine that the Everlasting Celestial Emperor had chosen that place to establish his palace.

Lin Feng noticed many people around them, but most of them looked dispirited. They didn't look interested after they looked at the mysterious mist. Lin Feng understood that those people were like him, that they had learnt something about the forbidden area from the godly awareness left by the emperor. They were just guarding the gate to see if anyone would come out with anything.

"Get in!" said Lin Feng. Suddenly, his Tian Ji Sword whistled and pierced through the mist, suddenly entering the forbidden area.

"Bzzz!" Many people saw him and rushed over. They glanced at him, but quickly lost interest. He was only a boy of the eighth Zun Qi layer. Even some great emperors had used weapons, to which their godly awareness was connected, to inspect the forbidden area but they had found nothing.

Inside the forbidden area, Lin Feng's Tian Ji Sword saw darkness, space-like darkness. At some point, the sword stopped and shook. It released wind and empty space energies, ready to escape just in case.

"Slash..." a terrifying wind swallowed the Tian Ji Sword. Suddenly, it flew away. In the darkness, terrifying destructive energies attacked the Tian Ji Sword, seemingly capable of consuming the sword in one strike.

“Come out!” shouted Lin Feng. The Tian Ji Sword immediately flew towards the exit and then reappeared next to Lin Feng.

It was buzzing, looking extremely scared.

“What a powerful sword!” said the young woman next to Ruo Xie.

They didn’t know how dumbstruck Lin Feng was at that moment. While the Tian Ji Sword was in the forbidden area, Lin Feng had had the sensation that the connection between him and his sword was going to be broken. Luckily, he had reacted in time and saved it.

“What did you see inside, Lin Feng?” asked the girl.

“It’s just darkness and there’s a terrifying destructive wind. There are some lights too, they look like some-type of counterforce. I can only imagine how destructive they were.” said Lin Feng.

“According to legends, the forbidden area existed before Si Xiang City. Nobody knows what that place is though. Some people say that in the past, the Everlasting Celestial Emperor used terrifying spells to travel inside, but, nobody really knows whether it’s true or not.” said the girl.

# Chapter 1573: Forbidden Area's Lights

---

Lin Feng was convinced that there had to be some people already inside.

In the great world, there were many terrifyingly strong cultivators. If one of these extremely strong cultivators had managed to go inside, they probably wouldn't talk about it to just anyone.

At that moment, some people arrived next to everyone and looked at Lin Feng, or more precisely, at his sword.

That sword had been into the forbidden area and had come back out. Even though it had only lasted a few seconds, they were still awed by it.

If they could get that sword, they would also be able to see what was inside the forbidden area.

Lin Feng sensed those greedy eyes looking at him.

"That sword seems useful after all." said Lu Yao at that moment.

"Everybody, I only glanced at the entrance, and saw that there's a terrifying destructive strength inside. My sword was almost destroyed inside, that's why I brought it back as soon as I could. That sword is connected to my soul, and I've been raising it for a long time, so even if it's in someone else's hands, it's useless." Lin Feng explained to the crowd calmly.

Lin Feng's message had the intended effect. When the crowd heard him, many of them forgot about it. Lin Feng was right, he had raised it, so it would only listen to him.

"Anyone can control a weapon if they're strong enough. Your cultivation level is low, and you can use the sword to get inside, so if a stronger cultivator used it and cleansed it, they'd be able to explore the forbidden area." reasoned Lu Yao. Even though he sounded calm on the outside, on the inside, he was smiling coldly.



“My cultivation level is low? Are you implying is that your sword is more powerful than my sword?” said Lin Feng, glancing back at Lu Yao indifferently. Lin Feng didn’t usually care about his provocations, but this time, he was provoking everybody else against him.

Lu Yao looked at Lin Feng, his eyes gleaming with sword lights. In Sword Mountain, swords were equivalent to people’s lives. They loved swords more than anything else. Lin Feng had only broken through to the eighth Zun Qi layer and was from a small world, so Lu Yao didn’t fear him.

“Indeed, that’s exactly what I think.” said Lu Yao, emphasizing each of his words. Surprisingly, he was even releasing sharp energies, and condensing a sword.

“Slash, slash!” Lin Feng’s Tian Ji Sword was furious as it suddenly spat out thunderous energies.

The thunderous energies moved quickly, instilling some fear into Lu Yao. The lightning collided with Lu Yao’s sword lights and their energies exploded against each other. But even then, the Tian Ji Sword continued moving towards Lu Yao’s throat.

“Die!” shouted Lu Yao. He suddenly released sharp sword lights from his third eye while condensing a sharp sword with his godly awareness. He had no choice but to use his godly awareness at this point.

The Tian Ji Sword and his godly awareness collided. Lu Yao shook violently, it felt like his godly awareness was going to explode. Lu Yao thought that he was doomed. He hadn’t believed that Lin Feng’s sword could be that fast. He didn’t even have time to use his full strength!

However, Lu Yao realized that he was still alive. Lin Feng had recalled his Tian Ji Sword, which was now floating above his head.

Lin Feng didn’t kill him!

Lu Yao looked depressed as he recalled his godly awareness. He felt humiliated. He was a disciple from Sword Mountain, but he still lost to a nobody in a contest of swords.

“Brother Lu Yao, don’t fret, he just attacked you by surprise is all. In a real battle, you could have won.” said one of the young men in the group Lu Yao had joined.

He had already sacrificed his sword a moment before coming to Si Xiang City, if he hadn’t, he might have won.

“I guarantee you that if you hadn’t sacrificed your sword, the results would be the same. You wouldn’t even have an opportunity to unsheathe your sword. Besides, you won’t have a second chance.” said Lin Feng calmly.

“Brother Lu Yao, if you’re not determined, you don’t deserve to be called a sword cultivator.” said the one next to him. Lu Yao’s looked horrified. If he backed down now, it would be a sign of weakness. After all, Lin Feng was weaker than him in cultivations, so there should be no reason for him to cower-away.

“Do you want to die?” said Lin Feng to the one who was provoking him. Lin Feng knew what that guy’s intentions were.

“If you want to die, come here.” said Lin Feng. He released cold sword energies which surrounded that person.

That person’s heart started racing. He also released terrifying energies.

That person’s Qi progressively weakened and finally disappeared. He ended up groaning from the effort. He had come for the great imperial palace, not to fight against this Lin Feng nobody.

“Let’s go.” said that person turning around and leaving. Lu Yao glanced at Lin Feng in a deep and meaningful way before he left. He wanted his godly awareness to stabilize before he fought against Lin Feng again.

People around them also left after that.

Then, Lin Feng returned his attention back to the entrance of the forbidden area.

“Let’s go.” said Lin Feng, going to another place.

Ruo Xie and the girl followed him. The girl thought that Lin Feng was rather mysterious. His dazzling sword was extremely powerful. If Lin Feng hadn’t controlled himself, he could have destroyed Lu Yao’s godly awareness and killed him.

A short time after, Lin Feng and the others travelled a few hundred meters away, still on the periphery of the forbidden area.

The Tian Ji Sword kept buzzing and shaking. It was surrounded by wind and empty space energies. It was also surrounded by thunders. It was getting ready to protect itself against the lights inside the forbidden area.

“Go in!” Lin Feng’s Tian Ji Sword penetrated the forbidden area again. His soul and his sword were connected so he could clearly sense everything his sword sensed. As before, there was only darkness inside, but there was also those star-like light projections. The destructive strength from before rose again.

“How come I have the impression that it is like a starry sky?” thought Lin Feng. His Tian Ji Sword rushed back, and he continued moving along.

It was always the same, no matter where Lin Feng probed. But during one of these probes, a shooting star passed by. With its appearance, there were more and more lights which contained destructive energies.

“What a terrifying strength!” thought Lin Feng shaking. He made his Tian Ji Sword come back and frowned. It seemed that with his strength, he basically couldn’t go into the forbidden area.

# Chapter 1574: Gigantic Elephant

---

“Lin Feng, why do you keep exploring the forbidden area?” asked Ruo Xie. He didn’t understand. Since Lin Feng knew what was inside, why did he need to keep observing it? Was there any hidden secret inside?

“Since the disciples of the Everlasting Celestial Emperor explored the whole city and found nothing, there must be something in the forbidden area.” said Lin Feng.

Ruo Xie and the girl’s eyes twinkled. Lin Feng was smart, and after they thought about it some more, they also thought that it was highly likely. Otherwise, how come the disciples of the emperor hadn’t found anything anywhere in Si Xiang City?

“Of course, that’s only a guess, but we can’t put it aside.” said Lin Feng after he saw that the two looked pensive.

“Indeed, that’s possible, but even if the Everlasting Celestial Emperor could get inside, we definitely can’t. If the Everlasting Celestial Emperor wanted to hide his palace, why do people say he was looking for a descendant?” asked Ruo Xie. There were still some things they didn’t understand.

“If the rumors are true, then there must be a way to get into the forbidden area.” said Lin Feng. “Therefore, I intend to wait here for the situation to change. Ruo Xie, what do you want to do?”

“I just came to gather experience, so I don’t have anything specific in mind. Since you want to wait here, I’ll stay here with you for a while.” replied Ruo Xie. Lin Feng and Ruo Xie were under different situations. Lin Feng had received the Everlasting Celestial Emperor’s godly awareness, therefore, he knew those things about the palace were true. Besides, he had communicated with the Everlasting Celestial Emperor which meant that he had chances to get into the palace, and de facto into the forbidden area.

A few days later, Lin Feng was still waiting outside. At that moment, the Tian Ji Sword penetrated the forbidden area again, but the scenery was the same: there were destructive star lights which forced him to pull back his sword immediately.

Lin Feng recalled his sword and decided not to use it to find clues anymore. Instead, he went to a mountain range not far from the forbidden area to practice cultivation while dreaming.

Time passed and apart from Lin Feng, many people were waiting. Maybe they were like Lin Feng in that they had obtained five Everlasting Bronze Plates and were sure that the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace was in the forbidden area.

Around twenty days passed and suddenly, a sound emerged from the forbidden area. It sounded like an elephant.

“An elephant sound again!” Suddenly, many people opened their eyes. These elephant sounds were a regular occurrence that lots of people knew about.

Lin Feng who was practicing cultivation in a dream suddenly opened his eyes and stood up. He looked at the forbidden area with curiosity.

“I’m going to go see what that was!” Lin Feng was convinced that something inside had changed.

He unsheathed his Tian Ji Sword which streaked across the sky.

As Lin Feng got closer, different kinds of strength surrounded his Tian Ji Sword before it pierced through the mist and entered the forbidden area again.

Inside, there were the same dazzling destructive lights, but there was also a rain of shooting stars.

The Tian Ji Sword rose up in the air and suddenly, Lin Feng, who was outside frowned. He saw a gigantic golden elephant which seemed capable of shaking the entire world.

“That elephant is even larger than the stone ape!” thought Lin Feng. That elephant was floating in the mid-air. People only had to stand outside the forbidden area, even at the periphery, they could still see it.

The most interesting part was that the elephant didn’t seem like it wanted to leave, it seemed to be waiting for something.

“Maybe the Everlasting Celestial Emperor sent that elephant?” thought Lin Feng. The golden destructive lights were emanating from the elephant’s nostrils. Maybe, if a cultivator managed to get on the elephant’s back, then they wouldn’t be assaulted by the destructive energies.

“Bzzz!” The Tian Ji Sword shook violently and dodged a light. It had to leave again. It was on its way back as Lin Feng was thinking of what to do.

Suddenly, Lin Feng frowned again as he saw a human being outside, who jumped into the forbidden area with incredible speed, landing on the elephant’s back. The cultivator looked rather small compared to the elephant.

A strong destructive wind kept blowing, and the Tian Ji Sword kept dodging the energies. Lin Feng left it inside because he wanted to see what would happen with that cultivators. That elephant was probably a high-level imperial beast, maybe even stronger, maybe it was a great imperial beast.

Therefore, Lin Feng wanted to see if the elephant was going to attack the cultivator on its back or do something unexpected.

The elephant seemed calm and it didn’t seem surprised to have a strong cultivator on its back.

“Slash, slash...” the Tian Ji Sword dashed out of the forbidden area.

“Should I try to get on his back too?” thought Lin Feng. Sharp sword lights appeared in his eyes as he thought, “If he didn’t get

in, he'd regret."

"Lin Feng!" said Ruo Xie. He was wondering what Lin Feng was thinking.

"Ruo Xie, there's a gigantic elephant inside. It's at least a high-level imperial beast, and it is attracting a lot of attention. Should we go inside together?" Lin Feng asked.

Ruo Xie looked dumbstruck. A gigantic elephant, a high-level imperial beast, attracting people? He was as excited and as scared as Lin Feng.

"What do you want to do?" asked Ruo Xie.

"I'm going in." said Lin Feng without hesitating.

"Alright, I'm coming with you." said Ruo Xie solemnly. He looked at the girl and asked, "What about you?"

The girl's eyes twinkled as she thought about the difficult choice. She looked at Ruo Xie in a meaningful way and said, "I'm coming."

"Alright, let's go then!" It was their own choice. They all rose up in the air and flew towards the elephant's location, piercing through the mist. Then, Lin Feng unsheathed his Tian Ji Sword again.

"Ruo Xie, use your speed abstruse energy on my sword!" said Lin Feng as he jumped onto his Tian Ji Sword. Ruo Xie and the girl followed him. They were all on the Tian Ji Sword, surrounded by speed abstruse energies. Many people frowned as they watched them dive in.

# Chapter 1575: Limitless

---

“Three people at once!” Many people’s silhouettes flickered after they saw Lin Feng and the others jump in.

Those three people weren’t that strong, only two cultivators of the ninth Zun Qi layer and one of the eighth. They hadn’t even broken through to the Huang Qi layer yet, but they dared go into the forbidden area.

Nobody wanted to die, and Lin Feng wasn’t an exception to this rule. This must mean that Lin Feng had discovered something.

At that moment, Lu Yao and the others were there too. They watched as Lin Feng and the others went in. His heart was pounding, he was hesitating, but he really wanted to jump in too.

“I have to!” Suddenly, Lu Yao turned into a sharp sword and jumped into the mist, risking his life.

“Eh?” the crowd was surprised to see another person go in. They were still nervous themselves.

“Let’s go.” said some people.

Lin Feng and the others were traversing the forbidden area. There was a strong wind, strong enough to scare them away if they hadn’t seen someone succeed already. If Lin Feng had looked back, he would have seen just how many he had encouraged to jump in as well.

Quickly enough, Lin Feng and the two others made it to the elephant’s back. That elephant was as large as a castle, making all cultivators on its back look like ants. Terrifying lights surrounded the elephant’s body, preventing the destructive energies from reaching them.

“More people are coming!” thought Lin Feng when he saw silhouettes flickering behind him.



Of course, some weaker people also came in and were immediately killed by the terrifying and destructive energies, leaving no traces of their bodies behind.

“The elephant is still not leaving, it’s like it’s waiting for more people.” thought the crowd. They had gambled, and it seemed like it was working, the elephant was waiting for them.

The wind spilled over and people could see it from outside. The cultivators who had remained outside saw so many of the others succeed, how could they control themselves? Especially emperors! They had to give it a try too.

Two hours later, there were more than one-hundred people on the elephant’s back and the wind was getting scarier with each minute.

Suddenly, the elephant trumpeted and finally, it started moving.

The elephant turned around and shot out like a golden beam of light towards the depths of the mysterious forbidden area.

Some people had just arrived at the forbidden area when the elephant leaving. They were furious, “No!”

The inside of the forbidden area was gigantic. The gigantic elephant continued moving through the darkness as everyone gazed at the stars and moon lights.

“No wonder that people don’t get out of the forbidden area, without the elephant, everyone would have died.” thought the crowd. Nobody disturbed one another, they just glanced around and looked pensive.

“Slash, slash...” terrifying sounds reverberated around them. The elephant was attacking the terrifying energies, leaving many people covered in a cold sweat. If the elephant was killed, they’d die too. They were now convinced that in there, even high-level emperors couldn’t survive.

Suddenly, the elephant trumpeted again, and golden lights

flashed again. Golden marks appeared under the elephant's feet.

"What's that?" thought the crowd.

"Oh no!" thought the crowd. A very powerful hurricane was heading towards them, filled with terrifyingly destructive energies.

"Bzzz!" Suddenly, the marks under the elephant's feet became dazzling. The crowd watched as the energies from the marks surrounded them. Golden lights appeared in their brain, just like an illusion.

"What a strange strength! That's a deployment spell!" thought Lin Feng as he recalled Yan Di's deployment spells.

"Kacha!" something broke. The crowd thought their bodies were breaking apart. They all started shaking violently, including Lin Feng. As the lights surrounded them, it seemed as if they had been teleported at the speed of light.

"Boom boom!" Explosions sounded. Lin Feng feared that his body was going to explode, the pain from the deployment skill was severe. He felt disoriented, like he was being tossed around violently.

Lin Feng finally stopped and tried to come back to his senses. He opened his eyes and saw stones all around him, even though there was almost no light to work with.

"Cliffs!" thought Lin Feng as he rubbed his sore body. He rose up in the air and finally saw some lights. He was in a mountain range, surrounded by cliffs. He had crashed against some rocks a moment before, which would explain his pain.

Lin Feng's mouth twitched as finally he understood what was going on.

The forbidden area of Si Xiang City was the entrance to a small world, but it was an incredibly dangerous entrance!

# Chapter 1576: Overly Aggressive

---

He looked at the sky and around him, but there was nobody else there. It seemed like they had arrived from the sky.

“If this small world doesn’t have another entrance apart from the one in Si Xiang, then it’s a lot more terrifying than the one I come from.” whispered Lin Feng.

From what Lin Feng understood, that elephant was a great imperial beast which could deploy powerful deployment spells. The elephant had to cast a deployment spell on all of them to protect them as they were thrown into a hole, which lead here.

Compared to Lin Feng’s small world, high-level emperors could rip through the sky to leave. But that probably wasn’t the case for this world.

Lin Feng thought for a few minutes before he started moving. He had to find people first, as he had lost Ruo Xie and the others when they fell in.

After a very long time, Lin Feng finally saw some palaces and temples. The buildings looked extraordinary, more so than anything found in Ba Huang or Jiu You, at least.

Lin Feng accelerated and entered a palace. There were a lot of people there. He had looked around before and figured that the Everlasting Celestial Emperor’s palace was most likely in that place.

Lin Feng glanced at the crowd below him. They were weaker than the cultivators he saw in the great world, but stronger than most of the cultivators in Ba Huang. There were many Zun cultivators, but not that many of them were at the top of the Zun Qi layer. In fact, he hadn’t seen a cultivator at the top of the Zun Qi layer yet.

Lin Feng descended from the sky, landing in front of three young

Zun cultivators.

They seemed surprised to see Lin Feng there. Lin Feng looked unfathomable even though he wasn't releasing any Qi.

"It must be a cultivator at the top of the Zun Qi layer." thought those people. The girl's eyes were twinkling as she looked at him in a cute way and asked, "What are you looking for, Master?"

"Have you ever heard of the Everlasting Celestial Great Emperor?" asked Lin Feng, rather straightforwardly.

"The Everlasting Celestial Great Emperor!" those three people shivered.

"Master, we haven't." said the girl shaking her head. She looked shy as she continued, "But I can take you somewhere where we can ask about it."

Lin Feng looked handsome, he was very fast, his cultivation was unfathomable, and he had straightforwardly asked about a great emperor. The girl was shivering after just guessing what his cultivation must be. If she could make friends with him, she'd probably benefit for a lifetime. Maybe she could get some Ancient scriptures with him.

"Where? Take me there." said Lin Feng.

"Alright, come with me." said the girl to Lin Feng in a gentle way, stretching her beautiful, slender, white hand towards him. Cultivators were extremely determined, which was the same with this girl. She knew that if she didn't meet any strong cultivators that she would never find any Ancient scriptures to study. Lin Feng was an opportunity in her eyes.

"Xi Yao!" said the two young men, both of them were surprised. Xi Yao smiled at them and said, "Go back to the sect and tell our teacher that I left with an extremely strong cultivator and that I don't know when I'll come back."

Xi Yao held hands with Lin Feng and they both flew away.

After the two young men watched Xi Yao and Lin Feng disappear from their fields of vision, they put on a rather upset face. They both liked her, but she had left with a stranger because he was stronger than them.

Lin Feng and the girl jumped onto his Tian Ji Sword and traveled very quickly, Xi Yao showing Lin Feng the way. Surprisingly, the girl leant against Lin Feng and asked, “What’s your name, Master?”

“Lin Feng!” said Lin Feng calmly.

“Lin Feng, can I call you by your name?”

“You can.” said Lin Feng nodding. Xi Yao looked happy and smiled, “Lin Feng, how long have you been practicing cultivation? You must be a cultivator at the top of the Zun Qi layer, right?”

“I’ve been practicing cultivation for about ten years.” said Lin Feng indifferently.

Xi Yao was awestruck, only ten years? But Lin Feng hadn’t replied to her question about whether he was a cultivator at the top of the Zun Qi layer, which probably meant that he was. She had been practicing cultivation for twenty years already, ever since she was a baby.

“You must have incredible skills, techniques, and spells. I wish I had some Ancient scriptures to work with, I would progress a lot faster.” said Xi Yao. With that, she held Lin Feng’s hand even tighter and wrapped her other arm around Lin Feng’s back. She was acting straightforward with him as well.

“If you can help me find what I’m looking for, I’ll transmit some Ancient scriptures to you.” said Lin Feng calmly. His heart was as calm as still water, beauty didn’t influence him.

Xi Yao got very excited, but she also looked disappointed. Was she so bad at seducing men? Lin Feng didn’t even glance at her.

The Palace of Tyranny had been created long ago. Although they

didn't have that many disciples, the few they had could be considered as leaders. Most of them were so strong that they were considered "unfathomable" by most. It was said that the first and second disciples were already cultivators at the very top of the Zun Qi layer. It was also said that the Tyrant, Master Jue Wu, had become an emperor one-hundred and twenty years before. Nobody knew how strong he was now.

The Palace of Tyranny was the vastest and the strongest. Xi Yao was taking Lin Feng there. She also explained Lin Feng some things about it. Lin Feng was pensive.

Outside the Palace of Tyranny, some disciples saw Lin Feng and Xi Yao arriving by a sword. They were both surprised, one of them even shouted, "Some people are coming."

"I'm Lin Feng, I'm here to see Master Jue Wu!" said Lin Feng. His voice rolled in waves as it travelled across the sky.

"Hmph! You dare arrive by sky! Put your sword away and come down, then give me your sword! If you want to see our master, you must respect our rules. You must kowtow three times and only then will I give you an opportunity to see my master!" said a guard who was wearing Taoists robes. Lin Feng frowned, what kind of rules were those? Hand over his sword? Kowtow three times? An opportunity?

"Indeed, those are the rules, but for strong people, there are always exceptions. I'll go talk to him." said Xi Yao in a low voice. She looked at those people and said, "We need to ask your Master something. I hope you can understand."

Xi Yao took out a ring and threw it at the guard.

The guard smiled as he glanced at the ring, then he said, "If you want to go in, you must still give me your sword."

"Hmph!" Lin Feng groaned coldly. That person was trying to steal his sword. Dazzling sword lights appeared, and Lin Feng

shouted furiously, “I’m Lin Feng, I’m here to see Master Jue Wu!”

His voice spread far off into the distance this time.

That person looked at Lin Feng in a cold way and shouted back “How audacious! You dare disturb our people who are practicing cultivation! You must want to die!”

Lin Feng’s eyes twinkled. He jumped forwards and released force which instantly surrounded that person’s body. Then, Lin Feng said in a cold way, “Piss off!”

The ground shook as that person was propelled away, causing him to cough up blood. His face turned deathly pale after he recovered himself. Lin Feng looked at him in a disdainful way as he said, “A doorman dares talk to me that!”

# Chapter 1577: Great Emperor of the Universe

---

Inside the Palace of Tyranny, Lin Feng's voice spread far. Silhouettes rose up in the air and flew over to him.

Xi Yao was startled as she looked at Lin Feng. She hadn't thought Lin Feng would be so aggressive. He even hurt someone outside the palace and disturbed everyone else.

Lin Feng's robe fluttered in the wind as he started running forwards. The ground and the walls shook with each step he took, marks trailed him even.

"You dared cause trouble in the Palace of Tyranny, how reckless!" said the guard who had been kicked away by Lin Feng. He landed far away, in the depths of the palace. He began moving back as he waited for some stronger cultivators to come.

"Ridiculous!" Lin Feng continued running forwards as released more force at the guard. He groaned with pain after Lin Feng released a gigantic hand which grabbed him. Then, Lin Feng landed in front of him again and stopped.

That person's face turned deathly pale as he said, "I'm from the Palace of Tyranny, how dare you hurt me!"

The gigantic hand assaulted him, causing him to cough up more blood, leaving his internal-organs severely damaged.

Finally, some people arrived and were glaring at Lin Feng.

"Who are you? How dare you act recklessly in the Palace of Tyranny!" said one of them. It was a cultivator at the top of the Zun Qi layer.

"I'm Lin Feng, and I came to see your master. I didn't come to be humiliated by your stupid doorman. I just finished teaching him a lesson." said Lin Feng loudly.



“He’s insane and disrespectful, brother, let’s kill him!” shouted the guard, his face now red. Lin Feng glanced at him, his mouth twitching. Lin Feng’s eyes turned pitch-black, and the guard’s determination was suddenly lost.

“How did he humiliate you?” asked the cultivator at the top of the Zun Qi layer. Nobody had ever dared act recklessly in the Palace of Tyranny. But now, a cultivator of the eighth Zun Qi layer had surprisingly dared. Besides, he said he wanted to see their teacher, even after he had injured their guard.

Xi Yao’s face turned pale. That cultivator was very strong, he was a cultivator at the top of the Zun Qi layer! Even if Lin Feng was strong, he probably couldn’t deal with them.

“Master, Lin Feng doesn’t understand the rules of the Palace of Tyranny, the guard said he wanted him to kowtow three times, so it infuriated him. He didn’t mean what he did.” explained Xi Yao. That person smiled coldly and said to Lin Feng, “Since it’s that way, go out and kowtow three times, then you can piss off and we’ll forget about all this.”

Xi Yao again looked petrified. She knew that Lin Feng wasn’t going to kowtow, which meant that things were going to get worse. She suddenly regretted bringing Lin Feng there.

Lin Feng glanced at him in a cold way before he jumped forwards. Two gigantic hands appeared this time, they also contained terrifying demon lights and force.

That cultivator was the third disciple from the Palace of Tyranny, but even with his status, he looked horrified. He could tell how strong that attack was, he was worried that he was going to be crushed like a pancake.

“Eighth Zun Qi layer, but how can he be so strong!” thought the third disciple. He released as much energy and force as he could, and then put his hands in front of him to block.

The people around them noticed that the third disciple couldn't block Lin Feng, so lunged towards Lin Feng as well.

The ground shook as Lin Feng's gigantic hands squished him. The third disciple's face was turned red, his organs felt like they had exploded, and he softly fell to the ground.

"Piss off!" shouted Lin Feng as he continued moving forwards. Everybody sensed death strength fill air around them, forcing them to stop.

"How strong! No wonder he despises the disciples from the Palace of Tyranny!" thought Xi Yao looking at Lin Feng, blinking her beautiful eyes with astonishment.

Lin Feng descended from the sky and landed next to the third disciple. He said indifferently, "I'm going to ask you something, and if you talk anymore shit, I'll kill you!"

Lin Feng released death energy which instantly surrounded the third disciple.

"Where is the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace in which the Everlasting Celestial Emperor lived?" asked Lin Feng. His eyes were pitch-black now, affecting the disciple's determination.

"The Everlasting Celestial Emperor, the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace!" that third disciple was confused. He had never heard of such an emperor in the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

"I don't know, I've never heard of him!" said the third disciple, terrified. He didn't dare lie, he could die at any time, and Lin Feng had damaged his determination to boot.

"Who's the strongest cultivator in this continent, and who can cast the most powerful deployment spells?" asked Lin Feng. Emperor Dong controlled the Qi Clan and the Qi Empire in Ba Huang and Jiu You. Maybe the Everlasting Celestial Emperor had another name in that small world.

"The Great Emperor of the Universe!" said that third disciple.

“Indeed, it’s the Great Emperor of the Universe. He has the best deployment spells and cultivation in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, but he rarely shows himself in the Continent of the Nine Clouds.”

“Everlasting Celestial Emperor, Great Emperor of the Universe!” whispered Lin Feng. Was that the same person?

“Where is the Great Emperor of the Universe’s palace?” asked Lin Feng.

“Inside the City of the Universe, there is a Palace of the Universe, which must be where the Great Emperor of the Universe lives. I don’t know if that’s what you’re looking for though.” said the third disciple.

At that moment, some strength suddenly appeared behind Lin Feng.

“Brothers!” everybody looked at the arriving cultivators respectfully. They were both cultivators at the very top of the Zun Qi layer. They probably didn’t have any enemies at the Zun level or below, especially one of them whose force was already multiplied by a thousand.

“Boom!” the second disciple ran forwards, his abstruse energy revealed itself to be Earth abstruse energy which was at the maximum level. It was only a step away from becoming cosmic energy.

Lin Feng rose up in the air and pushed Xi Yao behind him.

“Piss off!” said Lin Feng.

The second disciple continued releasing Earth abstruse energy, seemingly throwing mountains at him.

“Those who try to block me will die!” yelled Lin Feng. Suddenly, he released force which was multiplied by a thousand. The second disciple suddenly looked petrified but tried to control himself.

“He has no enemies at the Zun Qi level as well!” thought the second disciple.

Lin Feng took another step forward, causing the second disciple’s mouth to twitch. Suddenly, he moved aside and let Lin Feng pass. Who was insane enough to stop him?

Lin Feng didn’t even glance at him. Now there was someone else in front of him, the first disciple. He was the strongest one besides the emperor from that place.

“You think you will leave alive?” said that person.

Lin Feng continued moving forwards as a gigantic hand appeared above them, then he turned into an illusion.

“Die!” the first disciple punched the air with not only a force multiplied by a thousand, but abstruse energy which was at its highest level.

“Great Earth Destruction!” said Lin Feng. He moved like the wind and punched the first disciple. Immediately after, the atmosphere became calm.

Everybody was nervously staring at the fighters.

“Woosh!” Then, Lin Feng continued moving like the wind as he dragged Xi Yao with him, disappearing in the distance. The first disciple’s body slowly crackled, following some rumbling sounds, he exploded.

# Chapter 1578: The Appearance of the Palace

---

That first disciple was the strongest one there besides the emperor. Many people respected and admired him, but he died in such a tragic way! Just how strong was Lin Feng?

Everyone inside the Palace of Tyranny watched as Lin Feng left. Their hearts were practically pounding out of their chests, their clothes were drenched in sweat.

“That punch, the Great Earth Destruction, was so powerful!” whispered one of the cultivators.

Lin Feng didn’t care about what those people had to say, he got what he wanted and now he was out of there!

The Great Emperor of the Universe was the strongest cultivator in that small world... Was it too coincidental?

Seven days later, Lin Feng was travelling on sword above the City of the Universe. He had finally arrived.

His robe was fluttering in the wind majestically, Xi Yao couldn’t help but look at Lin Feng with admiration.

All in all, Xi Yao couldn’t understand Lin Feng. She didn’t even know that her world was only a small part of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. It was just a small world which had existed for millions of years. She also didn’t know that the real Continent of the Nine Clouds was actually beyond their world.

Not only was Lin Feng mysterious but he was also insensitive in her eyes. She had tried to seduce him many times, but it never worked.

Lin Feng glanced around and noticed that the people there seemed stronger than where had been so far. Cultivators at the top of the Zun Qi layer were normal there, there were even some emperors. However, Lin Feng didn’t care about them. He had come for the Great Emperor of the Universe. He wanted to see whether it

was the Everlasting Celestial Emperor.

“Let’s go to the great imperial palace!” said Lin Feng. Then they began descending from the sky. As they descended, a Zun cultivator approached him and said, “Your Excellency!”

That cultivator had inspected Lin Feng, figuring that he was probably a cultivator of the top of the Zun Qi layer, he had decided to act respectful.

“Could you please tell me where the Palace of the Universe is?” asked Lin Feng.

“The Palace of the Universe again!” that cultivator was surprised. He looked at Lin Feng in a strange way and asked, “Why did you word it like that?”

“Master, many people have come here for the Palace of the Universe, but I don’t know why.” said that person in a low voice. He pointed in the direction of the Palace of the Universe.

Lin Feng rose up in the air again, he had many thoughts running through his mind. He wasn’t the first one to make it here.

The Palace of the Universe wasn’t located in the central part of the City of the Universe, but rather on the periphery. It looked like a normal castle except that it looked endless. It was incomparably vast and tall. It was probably the largest building in that small world.

Lin Feng arrived in front of the Palace of the Universe and sighed. “Everlasting” was written in golden letters at the entrance.

“The Great Imperial Everlasting Palace!” that was the exact same palace he had seen when using the five Everlasting Bronze plates, but the illusion made it look much smaller.

“Everlasting!” Xi Yao looked at the word and remembered that Lin Feng was looking for the Everlasting Celestial Emperor.

Was the Everlasting Celestial Emperor Lin Feng was talking

about the Great Emperor of the Universe?

“I found it.” whispered Lin Feng. How many people got there before him though?

Lin Feng was suddenly illuminated by lights. He glanced around and saw that many people were staring at him.

Lin Feng even recognized some of them from the gigantic elephant. But even though they had already arrived, they were still standing outside, not daring to go inside.

The Everlasting Celestial Emperor’s deployment spells were terrifying. His deployment spells had killed many, many people. Therefore, they didn’t consider going inside. They were waiting for an opportunity, just like the elephant.

“It’s him!” two people had recognized Lin Feng. Lin Feng turned around and saw Lu Yao and one of the young men with whom Lu Yao had come with. They thought that they were fast, but Lin Feng surprised them by arriving even faster.

“I want to get into the palace. You should wait for me here, but if you don’t want to, you can just leave.” said Lin Feng to Xi Yao. She looked at him and said, “Lin Feng, you’re insane. It’s the Great Emperor of the Universe’s palace, people scared shitless to go in and yet, you don’t even think twice about it!”

No matter what she thought, Lin Feng had already started walking towards the palace. He had the Everlasting Celestial Emperor’s godly awareness, so he had to give it a try. Since the Great Emperor of the Universe was probably the Everlasting Celestial Emperor, why not try?

# Chapter 1579: Life and Death Path

---

Xi Yao wasn't the only one concerns, the others were all astonished too. Did he have a plan?

It was said that the Everlasting Celestial Emperor controlled three-thousand great deployment spells and 108,000 small deployment spells. He could protect the ten thousand things of creation with them. If he had cast those spells inside the palace, they would easily die. They were already outside the palace though, could they wait there forever? They had been waiting for someone to get in, and now Lin Feng was going in...

"Your Excellency!" shouted someone at that moment. Lin Feng stopped and saw that it was an old man in a purple robe talking to him. He slowly walked towards him and smiled, "The Everlasting Celestial Emperor could cast terrifying deployment spells, yet you have only broken through to the eighth Zun Qi layer. Aren't you afraid to go in?"

Lin Feng looked at him in a calm and serene way but smiled. He knew that the old man was trying to learn where Lin Feng's confidence came from.

"Master, cultivation can be dangerous sometimes, but since the Everlasting Celestial Emperor has left an unequal treasure here, I must try. Especially seeing how I'm here already." explained Lin Feng calmly.

"Alright, I wouldn't have thought that there were such brave young men in this world. I'll follow you. Maybe we can help each other." said the old man smiling. In Lin Feng's eyes, the old man was just trying to leech.

"As you wish, Master." said Lin Feng unperturbed. "After you."

"You first, I'll follow you, that way I can protect you from behind." said the old man indifferently. Lin Feng nodded and



smiled. Then, he continued walking forwards. He knew that the old man was only using him as a guinea pig, but that cultivator was an emperor, and Lin Feng didn't know how strong he was.

"Since he knows something, let's follow him." said Lu Yao who was watching them. Then, the young man and he followed Lin Feng. When the others saw that, they also followed. Once again, Lin Feng had convinced everyone to follow him.

Lin Feng didn't care about them though.

"Pfew..." Lin Feng stepped in front of the gate and a dazzling golden light illuminated his body. Then suddenly, he was in the palace.

In front of Lin Feng were four doors. On each of them, something was written: Heaven, Earth, Water, Fire.

The old man followed Lin Feng and looked at the four words as well. He smiled and said, "Little friend, which one is the door we can cross without dying?"

"Maybe all of them are safe." said Lin Feng. The old man smiled but Lin Feng continued, "Of course, they could all be deadly as well."

The old man didn't quite believe him, so he smiled again and said, "The Everlasting Celestial Emperor did this to attract people, so they couldn't possibly all be deadly. Which one is the right one, little friend?"

"Any of them!" said Lin Feng indifferently. Then he crossed the first door, which happened to be the one with the word "Heaven" written above it.

"That young man is fearless, it seems like he doesn't realize we could obtain incredible things by following him." thought the old man. Although he was weary of Lin Feng, he still followed him.

"Let's go." said Lu Yao to the others following him. Almost everybody chose the "Heaven" door.

After crossing through, they were greeted with some stone steps which had two words written on them: Life, Death!

There was a strange Qi looming at the bottom of those stone steps.

“The path of death and life, assumedly one can live or die in the blink of an eye.” thought the crowd. They all looked upset for they had heard about the life and death path before. It was a very dangerous deployment spell.

“Little friend, what should we do now? You seem to understand better than me.” said the old man, smiling at Lin Feng.

“Master, I’ve never been here, so how could I know?” asked Lin Feng. The old man looked upset as he said, “Little friend, you must be joking. You brought us here, so don’t tell me you don’t know how to pass through.”

“Master, you willingly came with me, I didn’t ask you to.” Lin Feng reminded him.

“Hmph!” The old glanced at Lin Feng in a cold way and walked to the stone steps. Suddenly, he shook his hand and lights assaulted one of the steps which had the word “life” written on it. In a flash, a destructive light surrounded the stone steps and it last for three seconds before it disappeared. Those lights could have easily killed someone.

The old man slowly turned around and smiled at Lin Feng, “Little friend, don’t you see? Lead the way please.”

Lin Feng frowned. Even though he knew how to get through it, that old man was still using him a guinea pig. If Lin Feng hadn’t received the great emperor’s godly awareness, he would have died already.

“Master, this is the great emperor’s palace. Thus, we must all collaborate instead of using one another as guinea pigs.” said Lin Feng, remaining calm.

“He’s right. Maybe we’ll encounter even more dangers, so if we only use people as guinea pigs, none of us will succeed.” reasoned another emperor.

“So what should we do, Your Excellency?” asked the old man to that person.

“I think there must be several ways to go about it. Ten deaths and no life, that is walk on the “death” stone steps only, then you could step on nine deaths and one life, etc. You just tried one, but we have yet to try the other ones.” said that emperor calmly. Then, they bombarded a death stone step and found that nothing happened.

“Ten deaths, no life.” that person reasoned. He continued attacking all the death stone steps, however, once he attacked the tenth one, destructive energies sprung up in the air.

“Nine deaths, one life. That’s the only possibility.” said the emperor slowly. He tried again and it worked.

“There must be an explanation to the deployment spell!” thought Lin Feng, glancing at the emperor.

“Little friend, you go.” said the old man in purple clothes smiling.

Lin Feng glanced at him and nodded, “Alright, I’ll go first.”

Lin Feng moved quickly, stepping on nine death stone steps and one life stone. Nobody dared to fly over. Since there were steps, it was implied that they must use them.

“We’re safe.” people’s eyes were twinkling.

“Everybody, don’t rush, otherwise you might die!” said the old man smiling. “I’m going next.”

Then, he climbed the stairs. He moved very quickly, however, Lin Feng released sword lights suddenly.

As if the old man had sensed something, his facial expression

changed drastically as he screamed, “What are you doing?”

“Killing you!” With that, Lin Feng attacked a death stone step.

“Try if you dare!” shouted the emperor furiously. He stretched out his hand, however, Lin Feng’s sword energies were too fast.

“Bzzz!” terrifying destructive energies filled the space. The old man gave a horrible shriek and was enveloped by those destructive lights. He glared at Lin Feng as he died.

“Don’t think you’re too smart, otherwise you’ll die without even knowing how!” mocked Lin Feng.

Lin Feng turned around and walked towards the next door.

# Chapter 1580: Not Dead Yet?

---

The Everlasting Celestial Emperor had told Lin Feng, with his godly awareness, that all four entrances were viable, and that they were all deadly. The deployment spells didn't limit a cultivator off their cultivation level, anyone who was weaker than the Everlasting Celestial Emperor had a chance to die while facing them.

Intelligence, wisdom and luck were the key ingredients to passing these trials. Of course, without the great emperor's godly awareness, it was make it even more difficult to move through the palace.

Lin Feng didn't know what there was at the center of the palace, so he remained cautious.

"I hope Ruo Xie won't enter this palace." thought Lin Feng. He had asked if Ruo Xie wanted to come with him because he figured they'd stay together. But now that Ruo Xie was apart from him, Lin Feng feared the worst.

Of course, Lin Feng knew that Ruo Xie wasn't stupid. Ruo Xie wanted to gain experience, so he prioritized the Everlasting Celestial Emperor's treasures less than the rest of them.

Using the godly awareness as a key, Lin Feng had no problems crossing several doors, and everyone followed him. They didn't know that Lin Feng didn't need to do anything special to cross them.

Those people were pleasantly surprised in fact. Lin Feng was their guide, and luckily, he didn't seem to care about them as they followed along.

"He must be wise." thought the emperor who had agreed with him before.

That place was seemingly endless. Lin Feng didn't cross all the

doors with his fastest speed, it took him half-a-day to get to the center of the palace. Finally, he arrived before the last door he had seen in his memories.

Lin Feng arrived in front of the door and saw some words in front of him: The Earth and the sky, a waterfall, a mountain, precipices, a peak.

“That’s...” Lin Feng was astonished. There was a person sitting cross-legged as well. They weren’t breathing, their heart wasn’t beating, they looked like a statue in every way except for their life-life appearance. That was the same person Lin Feng had seen in from the godly awareness: The Everlasting Celestial Emperor!

“Godly awareness!” thought Lin Feng. He sensed his godly awareness moving. Then a light shot out from his third eye.

The godly awareness ‘key’ moved towards the Everlasting Celestial Emperor and penetrated his third eye.

“That’s!” Lin Feng was shaking.

Lin Feng rose up in the air and landed on the peak. He wanted to get closer to the Everlasting Celestial Emperor.

“Boom!” A terrifying strength bombarded Lin Feng’s body, making him fly away.

Lin Feng’s eyes were filled with sharp lights. That deployment spell was terrifying, it had prevented him from getting any closer a moment before.

“Is that the Everlasting Celestial Emperor’s actual body? Was his goal to have people bring him back his godly awareness?” thought Lin Feng.

Lin Feng rose up in the air again while paying attention to the Everlasting Celestial Emperor’s body.

Everybody was standing behind Lin Feng wondering who it was.

“Do you recognize him?” asked the emperor from the life and

death stones. “There’s a powerful deployment spell on his body and it’s invisible. You activated it so it attacked you.”

“If I’m not mistaken, that must be the Everlasting Celestial Emperor. I already know that I activated it.” said Lin Feng.

“If that really is the Everlasting Celestial Emperor, then this must be a monster of a puzzle.” whispered the emperor.

He then took out three Everlasting Bronze Plates.

Suddenly, a cloud emerged from them and moved towards the Everlasting Celestial Emperor’s physical body.

“If you have all of the Everlasting Bronze Plates, then the Everlasting Celestial Emperor’s godly awareness will condense.” said Lin Feng.

“Look at that mountain.” said the emperor, pointing at something. Everything was moving: some cultivation caves appeared, and several deployment spells formed.

“Let’s go.” Everyone that was following Lin Feng moved towards the cultivation caves. They had followed him until now, so it was finally time to seize some opportunities!

Lin Feng didn’t follow them. There were so many caves, and he wasn’t in a rush. Those caves were probably made for practicing cultivation though.

“Master, what do you think?” Lin Feng asked the emperor.

“I don’t know either. We can go in and see though.” said the emperor smiling. Lin Feng nodded and went to the mountains.

However, someone suddenly rushed out of a cave looking terrified.

It was a Taoist monk. That Taoist monk looked at Lin Feng and laughed, “Little bastard! You’re not dead yet!”

“You old bastard! How could I die while you’re still alive?” Lin Feng said. How come that damn Taoist monk always appeared

where good things were!?



# Chapter 1581: Deployment Spell

---

That Taoist monk was Yan Di, of course. Lin Feng found it difficult to find the Everlasting Celestial Emperor's palace, but Yan Di was already there and had probably been there for a while now.

Even though they hadn't seen each other for two years, they were still close.

"You bastard, long time no see, you're still not a medium-level emperor?" asked Lin Feng. Yan Di rolled his eyes and said, "Do you think cultivating imperial levels are similar to the Xuan or Tian Qi layers? The Continent of the Nine Clouds is extremely vast, breaking through to the Huang Qi layer is already difficult. Some people need hundreds or even thousands of years to break through to the Huang Qi layer." said Yan Di.

Lin Feng smiled, he was just joking with Yan Di.

Even in places like Ba Huang and Jiu You, where there were billions of people, there were very, very few emperors. And in the great world, the reason why there were so many emperors was because there were trillions and trillions of people. Nobody knew exactly how many people there were because nobody had ever tried to count.

"How long have you been here and what did you find in those buildings?" Lin Feng asked.

"I've been here for a year already, concerning what you can find in those buildings, you can go and enjoy it for yourself. There are only good things." said Yan Di. Then, he suddenly narrowed his eyes and looked at the Everlasting Celestial Emperor. He looked surprised as he said, "Don't waste time, study, maybe the same thing that happened to me also happened to him."

Lin Feng nodded, he understood what Yan Di meant. Maybe that the Everlasting Celestial Emperor was going to come back to life

after all his godly awareness were brought back to him.

“Go!” said Yan Di to Lin Feng. He didn’t want to waste time talking about the past with Lin Feng. Since Lin Feng was alive and had come himself, he had to enjoy the benefits that place offered. Yan Di then went to another building.

Lin Feng listened to his advice and went to the building from which Yan Di had just come out of. Suddenly, a curtain of light appeared and closed the room off. Some strange marks appeared in front of Lin Feng, seemingly creating a seal.

The room wasn’t big, just large enough to practice cultivation.

Lin Feng turned around and touched the curtain of light which had closed the room and found that it was quite thick. It seemed like he was stuck inside now.

Lin Feng attacked the curtain with energies, but it felt like he was striking diamonds.

Lin Feng condensed strength in his fist, creating a strong wind.

“Great Earth Destruction!” Lin Feng attacked the wall. He had even amazed the Great Earth Demon Ape with that attack, but this curtain of light didn’t budge. On top of that, a terrifying strength counterattacked and bombarded him. He was propelled backwards and violently crashed against the wall behind him.

“That bastard didn’t tell me about that!” thought Lin Feng. He didn’t continue trying. The counterattack was too terrifying. Even Yan Di was probably unable to break that curtain of light.

Lin Feng walked to the marks and sat down cross-legged. Once he did, the marks around him started flashing even faster. Lin Feng was surprised, but he closed his eyes. Since Yan Di had managed to come out, it probably had something to do with those marks.

The lights revolved around Lin Feng’s head causing the atmosphere in the cave to change. It became dazzling, leaving Lin Feng the impression that he was in a large space. The numerous

marks and words floated around him before penetrating his head. Those marks and words became a part of his memories.

“Deployment!” A gigantic word appeared in front of Lin Feng appeared: “DEPLOYMENT!” Lin Feng relaxed and let the memories and the marks fill his head.

After what seemed to be a long time and countless memories, Lin Feng realized that he had received one of the three-thousand great deployment spells.

“Deployment spells use the strength of the Earth and the sky!” whispered Lin Feng.

Although people’s strength was limited, the strength of the Earth and sky was unlimited.

Weaker cultivators borrowed external strength to cast deployment spells, just as Yan Di had in the past when he used abstruse crystals or weapons. But those in the memories didn’t need to borrow external strength, they could use their own strength to attract the strength from the Earth and sky to carve holy marks and cast terrifying deployment spells. Of course, the more powerful the deployment spell was, the more time they needed.

# Chapter 1582: Action

---

Deployment spells were created from the use of many ancient words. Lin Feng had studied holy marks before, but he knew that his holy marks were rudimentary at best. Each stroke was incredible and mysterious, and he had never really understood the connections between marks, holy marks and deployment marks.

To carve authentic holy marks and use holy marks special powers, cultivators had to understand all sorts of marks. They had to understand which kind of strength was appropriate. Even the slightest mistake in the type of strength could weaken a deployment spell by a lot.

Of course, authentic deployment spell casters' knowledge couldn't be restrained to three-thousand great deployment spells and 108,000 small deployment spells, that was only an expression. Authentic deployment spell casters could cast an infinite number of deployment spells. What the Everlasting Celestial Emperor had implied with his expression "three thousand and 108,000 deployment spells" was that if a cultivator could manage to cast them all, then they'd be able to cast any deployment spell in the world. (Translator's note: some knowledge of Buddhism is required to understand that part: values have a symbolic meaning, for example when a monk chants a mantra 108 times, why 108 and not 50 or 200? Because it's a symbol).

Lin Feng familiarized himself with the memories he just received. From this ocean of memories, he needed to select drops of it at a time to understand them, one by one. In the end, he had to think of all these drops as a whole and create waves with them.

Besides, deployment spells were different from one person and another because they depended on the type of cosmic energies a cultivator understood. Depending on the type of strength used, deployment spells could have entirely different results. For example, if a cultivator wanted to create a cage using the arts of

deployment spells, the best energy to use was Earth energy. To make people feel drowsy, the best energy to use was illusion energy. And so on.

“It seems like casting powerful deployment spells requires a cultivator to control several types of abstruse energies or cosmic energies. I wonder how many types of energies the Everlasting Celestial Emperor controlled?” thought Lin Feng.

“To get out of here, I must cast a “shattering” deployment spell!” Lin Feng suddenly realized. A “shattering” deployment spell was used to break through things. It was one of the three thousand great deployment spells and was most effectively used with Earth abstruse or cosmic energy.

Lin Feng’s mouth twitched. He had to understand and control a deployment spells to get out? Were all the rooms like that? How many people would be stuck in those rooms?

Lin Feng shivered. The Everlasting Celestial Emperor was a bit cruel. Understanding and casting a deployment spell was easier said than done. People who slow to learn would be stuck for dozens or even hundreds of years in there!

Of course, that was a test and people had to be determined if they wanted to reap the benefits.

“One of the three thousand great deployment spells, I’m going to be stuck inside for a while I think...” thought Lin Feng smiling wryly. He was worried that if it took him too long to understand the deployment spell, his cultivation wouldn’t improve as fast as he’d like. But deployment spells were powerful too, even if he hadn’t been stuck inside, would he have considered giving up this treasure?

A shattering deployment spell could break through countless things. It might even be stronger than all of his current attacks.

Besides, he could use deployment spells for anything: to practice

cultivation, to fabricate weapons, and to concoct pills.

Back then, Yan Di had cast holy marks deployment spell in Tian Chi's snowy mountains using abstruse energies from the Qi of the Earth and sky. Now, Tian Chi's snowy peaks had become a holy cultivation place.

Lin Feng remained in the room, studying the varying words and marks. Even though his eyes were closed, his hands were moving silently in the air. he was carving words in the air, causing a mysterious strength to form. Lin Feng used immortal abstruse energy to carve those words, which allowed them to remain longer than they normally would.

A month later, Lin Feng was still carving marks with his fingers. His marks were connecting and could condense into holy mark strength. His power to learn was monstrous, but he didn't stop. Holy marks constituted the base for the three thousand great deployment spells and the 108,000 small deployment spells, but it was too much to take in with a short time. Yan Di had practiced using marks for a long time before, it wouldn't surprise Lin Feng if he had practiced using them for over a hundred years.

Six months passed, but Lin Feng was as determined as ever. All he thought about were deployment spells and nothing else could distract him. There was a small deployment spell in front of Lin Feng already. If other people knew his progress, they would probably vomit from anger!

A strong deployment spell caster had been where Lin Feng was now and had learnt one of the three-thousand great deployment spells from the Everlasting Celestial Emperor. He had practiced and studied diligently for ten years and in the end, he had only managed to understand ten percent of it.

One year passed before Lin Feng finally let his hands rest at his side. He sighed before he opened his eyes, looking disappointed.

"It's been one year already!" whispered Lin Feng. In one year, he

hadn't done anything but study deployment spells. That shattering deployment spell was so hard to cast! How long would he need? He was still stuck carving tiny deployment spells.

Actually, Lin Feng was doing great. In another cave, Lu Yao had already given up. He didn't continue practicing deployment spells but had decided to practice cultivation instead. He was worried that it would take ten years to practice deployment spells to a point where he could leave. He lost all his self-confidence and had decided to become an emperor with that time. Maybe he could break that curtain of light after becoming an emperor.

# Chapter 1583: Three Years

---

During that year, many people had entered the forbidden area of Si Xiang and appeared in the small world. They eventually found the great emperor's palace.

The Great Emperor of the Universe was the best cultivator in that small world, so it was easy to guess that the Everlasting Celestial Emperor and the Great Emperor of the Universe were the same person. It was also easy to recognize that it was the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace after seeing his castle.

Rumors circulated in the outside world concerning the forbidden area the Everlasting Celestial Emperor being linked. Of course, nobody knew that the elephant which brought them to the small world was also the beast that created the destructive energies. And in the process of taking them to the small world, it would throw them violently and randomly inside. Also, nobody knew that the elephant was choosing the people who entered. Nobody knew how many people survived when entering the forbidden area.

However, Lin Feng didn't know about what was going on in the great world.

At that moment, he was frowning. He breathed in and whispered, "Rigor and precision are the most important concepts when casting deployment spells because if you make a mistake, you lose everything."

Lin Feng's hand shook as he used immortal energies to carve more marks. He didn't try to carve the small deployment spells anymore, he had started all over again.

After a long time, some marks moved in a strange way, letting him heave a sigh of relief.

Lin Feng didn't stop though, and he continued carving. The deployment marks seemed countless. All the marks were



connecting and moving properly this time.

“Yan Di could already do that.” thought Lin Feng. Lin Feng didn’t try to do what the Everlasting Celestial Emperor had taught him, he was trying to understand things beyond their foundations. He failed many times but started up again each time.

Outside, seasons passed. Lin Feng had already spent three years in the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace. He had never needed so much time to understand something before.

At that moment, almost half of the caves were closed. Countless people had come to that small world, but the difficult part wasn’t getting there, it was leaving!

In one of those caves, a strong cultivator from the Palace of the Gods opened his eyes and looked dumbstruck. He whispered, “At the Palace of the Gods, we’re experts at deployment spells. I used to think that our deployment spells were incredible! But now I realize how ridiculous I was. The Everlasting Celestial Emperor’s deployment spells are terrifying. I don’t even know how long I’ll need to get out of here.”

“Luckily, I didn’t bring Xuan Chen. It might take me one-hundred years to get out of here.”

In a room next to him, there was a young man who was fixedly staring at the stone door. He was a young man from a very big family in Si Xiang City. He was an adept at deployment spells, and he was a low-level emperor already. However, he found it extremely difficult to study the Everlasting Celestial Emperor’s deployment spells. He had no problem with the basics, but to make them turn into deployment spells was another world of difficulty. He didn’t know how long it’d take him to succeed.

These are just a few examples of the trapped cultivators there. Many strong cultivators were even many high-level emperors, and had been inside for three years already, but they had the feeling they wouldn’t master the deployment spell anytime soon. There

was only one exception. He was wearing a Taoist robe and was popping in and out of caves seemingly effortlessly. In just three years, he had already been in ten caves. He understood them easily and his deployment spells improved. He could already imagine himself having studied the three-thousand great deployment spells.

Back at the great world, outside of Si Xiang City, there were many people resting on a mountain range. After two years without hearing anything from those inside, the elephant trumpeted once more, but none of them knew how to get in.

Qi Yu Chen was amongst them, but he looked dispirited as well. After three years of not hearing back from one person who entered, he was beginning to believe that he made the right choice in not jumping in. Instead, during those three years, he had practiced cultivation diligently and had become even stronger. He would soon become an emperor! He was considering going back to Qing Di Mountain and practicing cultivation there.

“It seems like I’m not as talented as Wen Ao Feng, it’s no wonder that our teacher prefers him.” thought Qi Yu Chen, standing up. Wen Ao Feng had broken through to the Huang Qi layer three years before, but Qi Yu Chen had been stuck at the same level since. He wasn’t the only one, Zhou Tian Ruo and the others were all in the same boat: stuck at the very, very top of the Zun Qi layer.

However, Qi Yu Chen wasn’t sad, he knew just how difficult it was to become an emperor. There was a gigantic difference between the Zun Qi layer and the Huang Qi layer. If only he had fate seeds, then he could break through to the Huang Qi layer easily. But he had decided that he didn’t to use them, he wanted to rely on himself to overcome this obstacle.

“Lin Feng, back then you had broken through to the eighth Zun Qi layer, and you were an extremely good fighter, but you probably haven’t broken through to the Huang Qi layer yet. I guarantee you I will break through to the Huang Qi layer before you.” thought Qi

Yu Chen, feeling determined. He thought that he had been stuck at the top of the Zun Qi layer because Lin Feng had influenced him back then.

# Chapter 1584: The Great Emperor in Cyan Clothes

---

It was at that moment that Lin Feng finally opened his eyes. He moved his hands with incredible precision, causing the space around him to distort more and more.

“Break!” Lin Feng shook his hand and a terrifying strength crashed onto the light curtain. The cave shook as energies bounced back and crashed onto Lin Feng’s body, making him strike the back of the cave again.

“My deployment spell is not explosive enough. I can’t break the door with just that strength.” thought Lin Feng, shaking his head. He was a bit disappointed. If a powerful deployment spell caster had been there with him, they would have been extremely pissed off if they heard him. In just three years, Lin Feng could already start casting powerful deployment spells.

“I wonder if I will ever get out.” Lin Feng slowly walked towards the light curtain again. He put his hands on it and marks appeared once more. The marks flashed as he infused strength into them. Lin Feng didn’t stop as he released abstruse strength into the light curtain. He also released immortal Qi, making the marks became even more distinct.

Lin Feng performed a million movements, filling the marks with a million “shattering” words.

Lin Feng moved back and performed one last hand seal. Dazzling lights illuminated the cave and then a terrifying strength surfaced. The light curtain broke apart and the door slowly opened itself. The lights from outside slowly filled the cave, shining upon Lin Feng.

“Three years!” Lin Feng came out and glanced around. Even though he didn’t know if the sky there was fake or real, seeing

sunlight again felt extremely pleasant. He had never practiced something for that long before!

During those three years, the outside world had changed. Maybe those who used to be cultivators at the very top of the Zun Qi layer had already broken through to the Huang Qi layer.

Lin Feng left the cave. He considered that that cave was the “shattering” deployment spell cave. What did the 299 others look like?

Lin Feng glanced around and looked for another empty cave. He wanted to try another one.

“Boom boom!” at that moment, a terrifying strength launched towards him. He thought he was going to suffocate under that strength. He frowned and glanced around. What was going on?

“Kaboom!” the strength became even more terrifying. It was as if the space around him was going to collapse. Was someone attacking the great emperor’s palace? If that was the case, they must be extremely strong.

Lin Feng wasn’t the only one who felt that, everybody there did, even those who were practicing inside the caves.

However, after the palace shook twice, the atmosphere became calm again.

The calm was misleading as a terrifying strength moved around the palace, causing even the mountains to break apart. The peak on which the Everlasting Celestial Emperor was sitting also broke apart. Lin Feng heard some sounds coming from the sky, making him wonder if it was going to collapse?

Gigantic craters and canyons appeared. Fissures appeared in the sky and finally, the sky broke apart. The outside world appeared in Lin Feng’s field of vision. There was someone standing above them, they looked both proud and arrogant. That person was wearing a cyan robe and his gaze was sharp. He was fixedly staring

at the Everlasting Celestial Emperor's physical body.

That person seemed to be thirty years old, but looks could be deceiving.

“A great emperor!” Lin Feng was astonished. That cultivator in the cyan robe was a great emperor, otherwise, he couldn't possibly have destroyed the great emperor's palace!

At that moment, whistling sounds appeared as the Earth and the sky shook violently. It was the elephant who had appeared above them!

“You stupid animal! You think you can throw me inside!?” said the young man. He shook his hand and golden lights flashed. Then a gigantic ball of light appeared, seemingly containing an infinite number of marks in the form of a deployment spell.

“Piss off!” the golden lights streaked across the sky and assaulted the elephant, crushing him. Right after, everything around them became chaotic. It was as if the Earth and sky were going to fall apart.

The gigantic elephant was propelled away. The young man jumped forwards and landed before the Everlasting Celestial Emperor's physical body. He said in a cold way, “You didn't go too far to hide. Surprisingly, you were hiding in a small world. What a pity for you! Did you think that the forbidden area of Si Xiang could stop me? Your most outstanding disciple!”

That young man's hand moved towards the physical body as he released a terrifying strength which seemed like it could destroy anything. But as that strength swept forward, some lights appeared around the great emperor's physical body. The great emperor in cyan robe frowned, but then smiled coldly, “Your deployment spells are still quite strong, I wonder when you carved them? But don't forget that in terms of deployment spells, I'm even stronger than you. You probably understand that in front of me, you have no chance to escape.”

“Sense the power of my shattering deployment spell! Is it stronger than yours?” said the young man. He took a step backwards and condensed golden strength. It wasn’t Earth strength like Lin Feng would have thought. After seeing that the great-emperor was going to unleash an incredible attack, Lin Feng ran away.

Lin Feng made it far off in the distance before that great emperor in the cyan robes finished condensing his strength into a deployment spell. It wasn’t finished quite yet, but it still looked terrifying.

“Break!” said the great emperor in the cyan robe. He looked arrogant, proud, and confident in his strength. His shattering deployment spell crashed onto the emperor’s physical body. Although his attack looked tiny, he purposely used as little space as possible to create an attack which was as powerful as possible. He wasted neither time nor energy this way.

“Kaboom!” a loud bang sounded. The physical body cracked apart, making the great emperor in the cyan robe smile coldly.

“Oh no.” However, at that moment, the great emperor’s facial expression changed drastically. Surprisingly, his great deployment spell bounced back at him. Energies evolved and rose to the skies before they attacked the great emperor in the cyan robe. He tried to escape, but it was already too late, he was imprisoned, and the energies crashed against his body.

The great emperor in cyan clothes was propelled into the ground, his face turned deathly pale. He knew that even if he used a powerful defensive spell, the energies would still lacerate him.

“Evolution! How is that possible! Surprisingly, your deployment spell can evolve!” the great emperor in the cyan clothes was stupefied. The Everlasting Celestial Emperor’s physical body hadn’t moved this whole time; however, he suddenly opened his eyes. He wasn’t breathing, his heart wasn’t beating, but his eyes

resembled those of a living being!



# Chapter 1585: Everlasting Transmission

---

“Why couldn’t it be possible? Don’t forget that I’m your teacher, and I’m the one who transmitted those deployment spells to you.” said the Everlasting Celestial Emperor calmly.

“Hmph! Everybody thinks that you are an extremely talented deployment spell caster, but what people don’t know is that you stole the Holy Emperor’s deployment spells! That’s how you became the Everlasting Celestial Emperor. Don’t think that I don’t know about that. If you transmitted all your knowledge to me, with my natural abilities, I should be stronger than you.” said the great emperor in the cyan clothes.

The gigantic elephant had returned and landed next to the Everlasting Celestial Emperor. It was looking at the great emperor in the cyan clothes in a cold way.

The Everlasting Celestial Great Emperor raised his hand, causing marks to appear. All the caves suddenly opened, and their prisoners came out. However, they were shocked to see the Everlasting Celestial Emperor fighting someone!

“Do you regret having ever called me teacher? As a teacher, maybe I could forgive you and transmit you my final knowledge.” said the Everlasting Celestial Emperor calmly. Surprisingly, the great emperor in cyan clothes looked at him in a disdainful way and said, “You are not even complete, do you actually believe that you can defeat me?”

“Since it’s that way, just forget it!” said the Everlasting Celestial Emperor. Then he released his godly awareness which turned into a million beams of light. They moved towards the third eyes of everyone who had just appeared. The great emperor in cyan clothes frowned after he witnessed this. He then asked, “What are you doing?”

“Maybe some of these people will receive everything I know,

maybe it will only be one person, maybe two... Of course, maybe none of them have received anything. Will you chase them or myself?" asked the Everlasting Celestial Emperor smiling. Suddenly, from under his feet, a terrifying light mark appeared. Buzzing sounds vibrated before the Everlasting Celestial Emperor suddenly disappeared.

"What a schemer!" the great emperor in cyan clothes looked furious. He quickly raised his hand and grabbed the two people closest to him. He released his godly awareness and dived into their memories.

"Nothing!" He shook his hand and their bodies exploded. He then threw the rest of their flesh and bones away. After that, he ran towards the Everlasting Celestial Emperor. Although he wanted to inspect everybody's memories, he figured that the Everlasting Celestial Emperor hadn't actually sent anything to anyone. Therefore, he could only attack the Everlasting Celestial Emperor.

"Come here!" said the gigantic elephant. The crowd was startled to see that incredible elephant talking to them, but they all jumped onto the elephant's back. The elephant wanted to take them back now.

Lin Feng's silhouette flickered, and he jumped onto the elephant, but he was frowning. Ruo Xie had also come to that small world and now that elephant was leaving. How could Ruo Xie make it back without the elephant?

The Earth and sky shook as the gigantic elephant then rose up in the air.

"Emperor!" Lin Feng saw Yan Di's silhouette flicker before he disappeared. Surprisingly, he wasn't going back with the elephant.

"I have things to do. Take care of yourself!" said Yan Di loudly. Then, he disappeared. Those who were outside of the palace had watched as the elephant rose up in the air, still trying to comprehend everything that had happened. A moment before,

someone had attacked the Great Emperor of the Universe's palace and now the elephant was leaving with so many people on its back. When had so many people entered the palace?

“Master Elephant, can you wait a second?” shouted Lin Feng. He finally saw Ruo Xie, who was currently releasing acceleration abstruse energy to madly catch up, but no matter how hard he tried, he couldn't catch up with the elephant.

The gigantic elephant suddenly moved back down, and the remaining people from the outside world jumped onto the elephant's back, including Ruo Xie and the girl.

Xi Yao saw Lin Feng on the elephant's back. Lin Feng had been looking for the Everlasting Celestial Emperor's palace for a long time, but was it really the Great Emperor of the Universe's palace? Just where was Lin Feng from?

She had to hide for the past three years because those people from the Palace of Tyranny had chased her. They were looking for her and Lin Feng to get their revenge. She had come back just a year before and had waited there for Lin Feng. And now he was leaving on this elephant's back?

“Xi Yao!” said Lin Feng, throwing a ring at her from the elephant's back.

“He's leaving.” Xi Yao caught the ring as he disappeared. The elephant pierced through the sky, but just where was that gigantic elephant going?

“Is there something in the sky?” thought Xi Yao. She was starting to have doubts about her own world.

Even though Lin Feng had pierced through the sky, the situation was still dangerous. Back in Si Xiang, they were brought back to the forbidden area, an area filled with destructive energies. The gigantic elephant rose up in the air, but the destructive energies continuously assaulted the protective layer around it. Many holes

started to form, and many people died from the energies which snuck through.

But the elephant used its full strength to get through the most dangerous part. Even though the worst was over, the remaining crowd on the elephant's back were still scared shitless.

“Lin Feng, did you go into the palace?” asked Ruo Xie to Lin Feng using telepathy. If Lin Feng hadn't told the elephant to wait, it would have left without him. Even though it wasn't a great effort for the elephant, for those on the ground, it was a life-saving feat.

“I did. It really was the Everlasting Celestial Emperor's palace. There were eighty-one traps inside and many people died. After those eighty-one tests, I got to the center of the palace where there were three-thousand caves from which you could learn the three-thousand great deployment spells of the emperor.”

“The Everlasting Celestial Emperor, and his three-thousand great deployment spells...” Ruo Xie's eyes twinkled as he thought about it.

“If you obtained any deployment spells, then that's great! I didn't get any.” said Ruo Xie laughing. He didn't mind, he couldn't have gotten in anyways.

Ruo Xie didn't know that so many people had regretted entering those caves because they had been stuck inside for such a long time.

“It's good for those who survived. During those three years, you've already reached the very top of the Zun Qi layer, you'll soon break through to the Huang Qi layer! Look at me, I'm still stuck at the same level as when I entered this small world.” said Lin Feng, still using telepathy. He didn't mind though, he was excited rather. Not only had he obtained a deployment spell, but in the thread of godly awareness that the great emperor and sent everyone, he had also obtained three thousand great deployment spells!

Lin Feng had already practiced for three years, but that was nothing, especially after breaking through to the Huang Qi layer. But the Everlasting Celestial Emperor's skills were priceless!

# Chapter 1586: Going Back To The Great World

---

At that moment, Lu Yao arrived next to Lin Feng and Ruo Xie. He looked at Lin Feng and smiled indifferently, “Lin Feng, after three years you’re still a cultivator of the eighth Zun Qi layer! You must have made great progress in terms of deployment spells, I suppose?”

Lin Feng glanced at Lu Yao and smiled coldly, “I’m alright.”

“I’m alright?” thought Lu Yao groaning coldly. The Everlasting Celestial Emperor’s great deployment spells were incredible, and yet Lin Feng dared say “I’m alright”? That must have meant that he had wasted the last three years trying to understand them, even though it was impossible to understand them in such a short time! Lin Feng was ridiculous.

Lu Yao had spent half a year trying to understand deployment spells before he realized that it was too difficult. At that time, he stopped and decided to practice cultivation, he wasn’t far from breaking through to the Huang Qi layer anymore. He was confident that with his level of sword cultivation, he could now easily kill the person he used to be three years before. On the other hand, Lin Feng hadn’t progressed at all, he just wasted time trying to understand deployment spells which were impossible to understand in such a short time.

For Lu Yao, those deployment spell memories were priceless treasures which had nothing to do with cultivation.

Lu Yao sat down next to Lin Feng as if they were friends. Seemingly forgetting that they had wanted to fight in the past.

“Lin Feng, your sword cultivation is incredible. Back then, you could have easily defeated me, but now you’ve wasted so much time trying to understand deployment spells. It’s a pity because

most emperors can't necessarily understand deployment spells, let alone us Zun level cultivators." said Lu Yao calmly.

Lin Feng looked amuse. He smiled at Lu Yao and said, "Are you done talking?"

Lu Yao was angry on the inside, but he didn't show it on the outside. How could Lin Feng remain so calm, and even make fun of him? There's no way he'd progressed these last three years.

"Yes, I am." said Lu Yao nodding.

"Alright, if you're done talking shit, piss off! Get away from me!" said Lin Feng.

Lu Yao stood up and groaned coldly, "When we go back to the great world, we'll have to exchange views on sword cultivation, Brother Lin."

After Lu Yao said that he walked away. Lin Feng didn't even glance at him as he left. Lin Feng didn't care about him at all.

The girl next to Ruo Xie, Lu Yao's fellow disciple, looked at Lin Feng with her beautiful eyes, amazed.

"Little friend!" said an emperor coming to Lin Feng at that moment. That was the emperor he had met in the palace where they were going through all the traps. Lin Feng remembered that guy was rather nice, unlike the emperor in green clothes whom Lin Feng had killed.

"Master!" said Lin Feng nodding. The emperor smiled and said, "Little friend, don't call me Master, it makes it sound like we didn't know each other. Call me Muyi."

"I must show respect because you're older than me. I'll call you Master Muyi then." said Lin Feng smiling politely.

"Alright. Little friend, you haven't leveled up during the last three years, so you must have been studying deployment spells?" Muyi asked Lin Feng. Unlike Lu Yao, he knew that Lin Feng was

smart. He even watched him kill an emperor with his sword. Because he knew that Lin Feng was smart, he knew that Lin Feng couldn't have possibly wasted his time in the palace. This led him to believe that Lin Feng had dedicated the whole time to deployment spells.

“The results were insignificant, but I now have a deeper appreciation of deployment spells.” said Lin Feng modestly. The results hadn't been insignificant at all, apart from Yan Di, he was the only one who had managed to learn one full deployment spell. That was why the Everlasting Celestial Emperor had transmitted all the deployment spells to him.

“What a show off!” thought Lu Yao after he heard Lin Feng. He must have learnt something while he was there. Mui was pleasantly surprised. Lin Feng had understood one of the thousand great deployment spells, that by itself was amazing and could qualify him as a real genius.

“Little friend, I also learnt some things. When we get out, can we exchange views on deployment spells? We can even spend some time together. What do you think?” asked Mui while smiling at Lin Feng. He thought Lin Feng was extraordinary, so befriending him before he became stronger could only benefit him.

Lin Feng noticed that Mui's eyes were twinkling. It was always good to have an emperor as a friend, but Lin Feng didn't know what that guy had in mind. Even though Lin Feng thought Mui was respectful and nice so far, traveling with him might be a risk. If Mui became aggressive, Lin Feng wouldn't stand a chance. Besides, Lin Feng didn't know how strong Mui really was, just that he was interested in deployment spells.

“Mui doesn't know that I received all of the deployment spells from the Everlasting Celestial Emperor. Apart from that, I know nothing which could be interesting to an emperor.” thought Lin Feng. He smiled and nodded, “That would be a pleasure, Master Mui.”



“Haha, great, I also learnt some stuff. This way we can both learn from each other.” said Mui. He was very happy that Lin Feng had accepted.

Lu Yao grew even more upset after he heard Lin Feng and Mui talking. He wanted to fight Lin Feng when they got back, but now an emperor might interfere.

While this was happening, everyone was still surrounded by destructive energies. The elephant was inhaling and exhaling them as they neared the entrance to the forbidden zone.

After a while, they arrived at the periphery of the forbidden area and the gigantic elephant stopped.

“Let’s go, after you get out, leave Si Xiang City as fast as possible!” said the gigantic elephant. Then, people’s silhouettes flickered out.

A lot of people were eyeballing Lin Feng and the others after they left the forbidden area. During those three years, many more people had heard about the forbidden area, and they came, but because they hadn’t heard about the elephant, they were at a loss as to what to do.

“They came out!” thought the crowd! Surprisingly, people had made it out alive from the forbidden area. On top of that, there wasn’t just a few of them, but a crowd.

“Fwoosh!” people moved like the wind and landed in front of those who had just come out of the forbidden area. Some emperors in the sky looked down at them and asked indifferently, “Where did you go? Did you find the emperor’s palace?”

“The emperor’s palace is in the forbidden area, but it’s been destroyed. A great emperor came and destroyed it.” said Mui calmly.

“The palace was destroyed?” the crowd was shocked.

“Lu Yao, Ruo Xie, Lin Xue!” said an emperor at that moment. He

was probably a strong cultivator from Sword Mountain because he had an ancient-looking sword resting on his back. Then he said to them, “Come with me.”

“Alright.” Lu Yao said while nodding. Then, he followed. He was safe with that elder, which was important right now because some people wanted to know more about the emperor’s palace, so everyone who just escaped were probably in danger.

Ruo Xie nodded at Lin Feng and then left with Lin Xue. Sword Mountain had some powerful emperors, so nobody tried to prevent them from leaving.

“Let’s go as well.” said Muyi to Lin Feng. He was strong enough as well, so nobody would try to stop them. The crowd glanced over the remaining people, especially those who were weaker or didn’t belong to a powerful group.

At that moment, in the distance, gigantic waves of Qi rolled in waves. Muyi looked surprised and frowned and accelerated.

Many people in the surroundings did the same and accelerated.

“Those who just left the forbidden area can’t leave, that’s an order from the Everlasting Palace.” said an extremely loud voice. Muyi and everybody else were startled. However, Muyi and the other emperors accelerated away, only stupid people would have stopped.

“An order from the Everlasting Palace?” asked Lin Feng. Did it have to do anything with the Everlasting Celestial Emperor?

“After the Everlasting Celestial Emperor fell, his disciple rebuilt the Everlasting Palace, but he rebuilt in another territory in Si Xiang City. The one who had attacked the palace probably informed people from the outside world, so this would be them. Unfortunately for them, they were slower than us.”

# Chapter 1587: Shopping

---

Muyi's speed was terrifying. They flew over countless mountain ranges, but they didn't stop once. If they did, then those people from the Everlasting palace might catch up with them.

"Lin Feng, you haven't leveled up yet. We can find a place for you to rest and level up if you want. I don't have any ideas, so you can simply tell me where you want to go and I'll follow you." said Muyi as he smiled at Lin Feng.

"I want to go to Qing Di Mountain, where the nine great celestial castles are. You must know about that place, right Master Muyi?" asked Lin Feng. The nine great celestial castles were very far, so it wouldn't surprise Lin Feng if Muyi didn't know where they were.

"I do. You can access the small worlds from there. The place is alright, but there are so many people trying to rule over the small worlds there. The nine great celestial castles have existed for a long time and are quite influential. I've never been there, but I know about it." said Muyi laughing. "I'd be happy to go there. It's probably a good place to exchange views on deployment spells."

"I think so too." said Lin Feng smiling happily.

The reason why he didn't ask to go back to Yao Ye Island was because most of the people from there had left to look for the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace. If he practiced deployment spells there, then they'd know he had received the Everlasting Celestial Emperor's transmissions. Lin Feng still didn't know who the leaders of Yao Ye Island were, so he didn't want to risk it.

Muyi and Lin Feng eventually arrived in the territory of the nine great celestial castles. Lin Feng had already changed his face to one that nobody in the great world had ever seen. He hadn't been to the nine great celestial castles for three years now, so he didn't expect to find too much trouble. His new identity was: Mu En from the Everlasting Palace.

The Everlasting Palace was in Si Xiang City, which is extremely far from the nine great celestial castles, so nobody in the nine great celestial castles should know about all their cultivators.

Of course, Lin Feng had already told Muyi about all this, so Muyi was now also from the Everlasting Palace. Muyi was Mu En's uncle and they were traveling to become stronger.

Lin Feng and Muyi didn't go to any of the castles, they stayed inside the buffer zone instead.

Lin Feng and Muyi had found a courtyard and were seated on some stone chairs. They were chatting about the deployment spells they'd learned. Muyi had obtained the illusion deployment spell in his cave. Using illusion cosmic energy to carve its deployment marks was the most powerful way to cast the illusion deployment spell. Lin Feng didn't hide the fact that he had studied the shattering deployment spell. He had actually received all the deployment spells, but he hadn't told Muyi about that. They exchanged views about their respective deployment spells and even exchanged them. Lin Feng didn't mind giving his shattering deployment spell to Muyi.

"The Everlasting Celestial Emperor's deployment spells constitute an extensive knowledge and profound scholarship. After three years, I still have this feeling that I know very little about them. You're even more talented than me, Lin Feng." said Muyi sighing. Then he smiled and said, "I wonder who he transmitted his knowledge to in the end when he released his godly awareness to everyone."

"Maybe he didn't give anything to anyone, trying to lure away the great emperor who was attacking him." said Lin Feng.

"No, in my opinion, he must have chosen two people. He couldn't risk letting his deployment spells disappear. Besides, he probably chose the most talented people, that way, when those people become strong and mastered his deployment spells, they'd

attract the attention of the Everlasting Palace. His descendent will then fight against his disciple, avenging him.”

Muyi explained all this while smiling cheerfully. Lin Feng hadn't thought about it that much. When they left the forbidden area, strong cultivators were already waiting for them. That meant that the descendants of the Everlasting Celestial Emperor, who had received his transmissions, were already enemies of the great emperor in the cyan clothes. The great emperor wasn't going to let the Everlasting Celestial Emperor's descendants off. All the descendants could do now was to remain discreet as they continued to grow stronger.

“The Everlasting Celestial Emperor is cruel then, leaving his descendants in such danger!” said Lin Feng laughing and shaking his head.

“If anyone had the choice, they'd still choose to receive his transmissions though.” said Muyi smiling. He didn't know that Lin Feng had come out of a cave on his own, otherwise, he would have thought that Lin Feng had received the emperor's transmissions.

Lin Feng had also thought about that. He was wondering what the great emperor in cyan clothes thought when he saw him outside the cultivation caves. Did he know that it meant that Lin Feng had come out on his own?

“Master Muyi, you're right, nobody could refuse the emperor's transmissions.” said Lin Feng smiling. “In the cave, apart from learning the shattering deployment spell, I also received some instructions concerning deployment spells. I need to study those memories some, and when I'm done, I'll show you too. That way we can progress together.”

“Alright, practice well. I'm going to try practicing the illusion deployment spell while you're busy.” said Muyi happily. Lin Feng nodded and went to his room. In the Everlasting Celestial Emperor's transmissions, there were methods to creating

deployment weapons, which was different from creating regular weapons. To create these weapons, cultivators needed to carve holy marks in their deployment spells, they also needed some materials, soul strength, and fire.

Lin Feng went back to his room and started studying the transmissions. Back in Tian Chi, one of the leaders had given him a talisman in which he had carved holy marks into. Crushing that talisman had increased Lin Feng's speed by incredible amounts. If he could carve holy marks with wind and empty space strength, and then put them in a talisman, his speed would increase by a lot! It could be life-saving tool in the great world.

Lin Feng practiced for a month before he left his room and went to the market. There, he got some animal furs which he could use to carve holy marks into, creating talismans. Then, he went back to his room and spent even more time in there: two months.

When Lin Feng came out the next time, he found that the courtyard was enveloped by mist. Lin Feng released his godly awareness but found that something was blocking him.

"How is that illusion deployment spell Lin Feng?" asked Muye smiling.

"Not bad at all! I really could get stuck inside!" said Lin Feng laughing.

"It's not that powerful, but it's okay. I've been practicing for a while now, but that's the best I can do. Illusion deployment spells are really difficult to understand." said Muye smiling.

Cosmic energy was better than abstruse energy to carve deployment marks with, and deployment marks carved using illusion cosmic energy were more powerful than other types of marks when casting illusion deployment spells. That was the reason why the spells was that powerful even though Muye hadn't understood much.

“Master Muyi, you’re doing great already.” said Lin Feng encouragingly. Muyi looked at Lin Feng and smiled, “Do you want to go out again?”

“Yes, I need more materials to create a talisman, and to cast more powerful deployment spells with.” replied Lin Feng. Muyi nodded and said, “Alright, you can go.”

Muyi waved and the illusion faded. A small path appeared and Lin Feng walked through it to go to the market in the buffer zone.

# Chapter 1588: The Power of the Deployment Talisman

---

Lin Feng walked through the market in the buffer zone, observing the many priceless treasures. Lin Feng bought some materials for his talisman first and then he went to a place to get furs.

“I need a high-quality fur to carve holy marks with, Sir.” said Lin Feng to an old man in a shop. He needed high-level items because ordinary items couldn’t stand holy marks’ strength.

“What animal level?” asked the old man.

“As high as possible.” replied Lin Feng.

“I have a fur from an animal at the top of the Zun Qi layer: a cyan thunder lion. But it’s expensive...” said the old man. High-level Zun beasts were difficult to kill, so their products were naturally extremely expensive.

“A few holy weapons should be enough, right?” asked Lin Feng. He had many holy weapons to bargain with after he had gathered them during previous battles.

The old man looked at the holy weapons and smiled, “That’s fine.”

Then, Lin Feng exchanged the lion fur for the holy weapons. The fur was cyan and purple in color and looked to be in great quality. He didn’t care about the holy weapons that much. With that fur, he could make a great talisman. If he managed to make a talisman, it would be priceless, even more valuable than all those holy weapons.

Lin Feng took the fur and left the shop. He walked short distance and stopped again, this time because some people had appeared in front of him. The leader of the group looked like a noble.



“Your Excellency, we want to exchange something for that animal fur you bought.” said the young man who was wearing golden clothes. Lin Feng recognized the clothes as those worn by cultivators from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness.

“What are you asking for it?” asked Lin Feng smiling.

“This holy weapon for your fur.” said the young man, taking out a medium-level holy weapon. Lin Feng smiled again while saying indifferently, “Why don’t you just steal it?”

The young man frowned after he heard Lin Feng, but tried to remain calm and smiled calmly back, “Your Excellency, I’m Zhou Tian Mu from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness. If you give me that fur, you’ll be able to say that you are my friend.”

“Why would I need that?” asked Lin Feng. He wasn’t in a hurry to leave. He was wondering who Zhou Tian Mu was relative to Zhou Tian Xiao and Zhou Tian Ruo. Zhou Tian Mu was at the top of the eighth Zun Qi layer and his Qi wasn’t stable. Thus, Zhou Tian Mu didn’t seem that strong.

Zhou Tian Mu looked at Lin Feng in a cold way and said, “Your Excellency, I am willing to exchange a holy weapon for your fur, don’t be disrespectful now!”

Even though Zhou Tian Mu didn’t look amazing, he knew all the strong younger people in the nine great celestial castles and Lin Feng wasn’t one of them.

“Why are you even being polite with him! Just steal his item!” said someone next to Zhou Tian Mu in a rude way. He was probably one of Zhou Tian Mu’s guards because he had broken through to the ninth Zun Qi layer.

“Very good, I’ll use you to see how powerful my talisman is!” said Lin Feng in a low voice. The guy in front of him took a large step towards him and a gigantic golden hand suddenly appeared above Lin Feng. But Lin Feng used his talisman against the golden hand.

“Boom!” Explosions sounded as that strong cultivator gave a horrible shriek. His hand was broken and it was on fire.

“Slash...” he released golden holy Qi from his other hand to heal himself. Quickly enough, he managed to put out the fire. His face was deathly pale, like a sheet of paper, as he stared at his hand. That deployment talisman was terrifying.

Zhou Tian Mu and the other guy were shocked. That person’s Qi looked ordinary, but it was actually very strong. Since Lin Feng looked yellowish and sick, Zhou Tian Mu had first proposed an exchange. He didn’t want to steal it directly, but then Lin Feng had been impolite, so he needed to be taught a lesson.

Lin Feng just wanted to try out his talisman, of which he had used demon and fire abstruse energies to carve the holy marks with. He had also used the shattering deployment spell, so defeating a cultivator of the ninth Zun Qi layer was nothing exceptional. He couldn’t wait to improve his talisman with better materials, then he could crush any cultivator of the Zun Qi layer.

“How dare you!” said Zhou Tian Mu. Lin Feng smiled in a strange way and said, “Did you think I was going to let him attack me without protecting myself?”

Lin Feng then took out two talismans and left. Zhou Tian Mu looked pale, “Who are you? How come you dare attack our people from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness?”

“The Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness?” said Lin Feng, stopping in the air. He looked at Zhou Tian Mu in a cold way and said, “Give me your rings and break your connections to them.”

“Kaboom!” Zhou Tian Mu immediately released Qi.

“Do you want me to take them myself?” asked Lin Feng, walking towards them with his deployment talisman in-hand.

Suddenly, Lin Feng disappeared as he turned into a shadow. The one whose hand had been injured a moment before looked

terrified. He wanted to escape, but Lin Feng's deployment talisman immediately crashed onto his chest. Pieces of flesh exploded, and he started burning. He gave horrible shrieks before he was quickly reduced to ash.

"Isn't that Zhou Tian Mu? He likes to bully weaker people, but he didn't expect to run into a talisman expert!"

"People who fabricate deployment talismans are rare, and yet, he's a good one. He killed a cultivator of the ninth Zun Qi layer effortlessly with that talisman. I wonder if he made it himself, because if he did, he's even more talented than I'm giving him credit for!" somebody in surrounding crowd said.

Lin Feng didn't care about them. He walked to the one who was burning, knelt a bit, and took his ring. Then he said indifferently, "You're very disrespectful."

Then, Lin Feng raised his head and looked at Zhou Tian Mu and the other guy. He could easily kill them with his strength, but he had changed his face, so he couldn't use his real powers. He was Mu En from the Everlasting Palace now and he was a deployment spell caster.

"Give them to me or I'll take them myself." said Lin Feng cruelly. He looked like a freak with his sickly-yellow face.

"Anyone can make mistakes, but you must forgive them when possible. The Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness wants friends like you." said Zhou Tian Mu, trying to scare Lin Feng using the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness' reputation.

"I don't care about that." said Lin Feng as he stepped towards Zhou Tian Mu. But Lin Feng's intimidation worked as he immediately took out his ring and threw it at Lin Feng.

"If you guys hide anything from me, I'll do the same to you." said Lin Feng indifferently. Zhou Tian Mu glanced at his friend, and they both took out more rings and threw them at Lin Feng. They

didn't want to take any risks now that they knew Lin Feng could easily kill them.

"Piss off now." said Lin Feng. Zhou Tian Mu and his guard then left.

Lin Feng ignored them and continued walking ahead, not concealing himself as he moved.

"People who make talismans are interesting. Surprisingly, that guy doesn't fear the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness." thought the crowd in the distance. The Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness will definitely look for him at some point, after all, Zhou Tian Mu was part of their direct lineage.

# Chapter 1589: Chaos

---

Lin Feng walked back calmly. Muyi was still trying his illusion deployment spells when he made it back. He took Lin Feng inside aside and said, “Lin Feng, is there anything you’d improve here?”

Lin Feng glanced around at the mist, and then he released his godly awareness and inspected the illusion. He couldn’t find any exits.

“Bzzz!” Lin Feng suddenly jumped and moved around quickly. He realized that he really was stuck inside. He kept moving about but he always ended up in the same place.

Muyi smiled and said, “My illusion isn’t big, but it works. I can’t wait to learn how to make larger ones someday!”

“You will.” said Lin Feng smiling.

“Master Muyi, I’m going to practice my shattering deployment spell in the courtyard, and I don’t want to be disturbed.” said Lin Feng smiling. Muyi nodded, “Alright, I won’t be far.”

Lin Feng put his hand on the ground and started carving marks, each stroke being clear and distinct.

“How strong!” thought Muyi. Lin Feng’s deployment spells were far better than his, especially when it came to carving marks. His strokes were so precise and clear!

“Really strong deployment spell casters don’t even need to use their hands, they can simply use their feet! I need to sense the ground better with my hands. I wish I was at the Everlasting Celestial Emperor’s level though, he only used his mind to carve marks. That’s the highest level.” said Lin Feng smiling. Muyi nodded back in agreeance.

Four hours later, Lin Feng managed to cast a powerful shattering deployment spell. Muyi was astounded by his work. At that moment, he realized just how far he was from Lin Feng when it

came to deployment spells. It seemed like following Lin Feng was the right choice.

After casting the shattering deployment spell, Lin Feng went back to his room to make great talismans with the materials he had purchased. Meanwhile, Muyi continued improving his illusion deployment spell.

At that moment, some people arrived outside of Lin Feng's house and surrounded it. The leader of the group was an old man who looked very strong. Zhou Tian Mu was standing next to him.

They had brought many cultivators of the eighth and ninth Zun Qi layer with them.

"Young Master!" shouted some people outside. They moved aside to let Zhou Tian Mu pass. Zhou Tian Mu looked furious as he said, "Where is he?"

"In his room, but we can't see clearly because there's an illusion in the way." explained someone as he pointed at Lin Feng's house. Zhou Tian Mu nodded. The old man next to him was a cultivator at the very top of the Zun Qi layer, but he wasn't talented enough to break through to the Huang Qi layer without fate seeds. The Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness didn't care about him too much because of that. Zhou Tian Mu wasn't that talented either, so he couldn't ask for help from their emperors, but this guy was at the top of the Zun Qi layer and had a force which was multiplied by a thousand. That should be enough to kill Lin Feng.

"Let's go." said Zhou Tian Mu. They arrived in front of the illusion, but the old man raised his hand and said, "Tian Mu, you said he knew that you were from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness but still dared attack you. Let's see who he is first."

"I'm Di Xiu from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, I came to greet you, Your Excellency!" said the cultivator at the very top of the Zun Qi layer extremely loudly. Muyi frowned, who?

Lin Feng came out of his room after he heard that guy. Lin Feng and Mui could clearly see outside from inside the illusion with their godly awareness.

So many people came to greet them?

“Piss off!” said Lin Feng extremely loudly, leaving Di Xiu, Zhou Tian Mu and the others upset. Just how arrogant could you get?!

“Di Xiu, that person is extremely arrogant, so don’t be polite to him. Just go in and kill him!” said Zhou Tian Mu to Di Xiu.

“Your Excellency, if you don’t come out, don’t blame me for coming in.” said Di Xiu loudly. Nobody replied this time, making him feel even more humiliated.

He groaned coldly and entered the illusion while releasing golden holy Qi. But as soon as he entered the mist, he was moved somewhere else.

“Deployment spell?” Di Xiu said, distressed. Suddenly, he rose up in the air, trying to escape the spell.

Zhou Tian Mu and the others followed him, but their godly awareness were blocked.

“A deployment talisman and now this. Is he a deployment spell caster?” asked Di Xiu. Zhou Tian Mu had said that that sick looking young man probably hadn’t made the talisman himself because they had never heard of such a strong deployment spell caster in the region.

“If you’re not a coward, come out and fight!” said Zhou Tian Mu, he was getting impatient.

“You’re acting recklessly!” said a voice. Then suddenly, the ground shook and marks appeared under his feet. A terrifying strength emanated from those marks.

“Be careful!” Di Xiu sensed something was coming. Zhou Tian Mu released more golden holy Qi, but a light rose up in the air and

enveloped his foot. The light took his leg, but if he hadn't moved so quickly, his entire body would have been enveloped by that light.

"Deployment spells again!" Di Xiu was getting concerned, especially now that Zhou Tian Mu was trapped. He had only lost his leg, but it would still be extremely difficult for him to heal. Barring that, they still had to get out first.

"Let's get out!" said Zhou Tian Mu furiously. He started running, but no matter how hard he tried, he couldn't get out.

Di Xiu was petrified as he shouted, "Your Excellency! Forgive us, please let us leave, I beg you!"

"I told you to piss off but you came in, now you're not going anywhere!" said Lin Feng calmly. There was a subtle sound, like someone closing a door. Di Xiu's face turned deathly pale.

"You must want to die!" shouted Zhou Tian Mu furiously. Then, he took out a talisman and broke it. He could only use that talisman if he was in imminent danger. After breaking it, some strong emperors would come and save him.

Outside the deployment spell, more people were gathering, "Let's go and inform Jin Chen Jun." Then they disappeared.

At the same time, some other people started running away to inform their respective groups that a powerful deployment spell master was in their territory.

Not long after, some golden holy Qi rose to the skies and a silhouette in a golden robe appeared, "Someone dared threaten young people from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness?!"



# Chapter 1590: Shattering Deployment Spell

---

Jin Chen Jun was seated cross-legged in one of the larger halls in the Celestial Qi Castle. He looked excited after he overheard some people talking about a deployment spell caster who was attacking people from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness. That's great!

"You said that person can also create deployment spell talismans?" asked Jin Chen Jun.

"I saw him with my own eyes, he killed a cultivator of the ninth Zun Qi layer with one. I don't know if he created the talisman himself though." that person replied. Jin Chen Jun nodded and stood up, "If Celestial Qi Castle could invite him, that would be interesting."

Jin Chen Jun knew that having a deployment spell caster as a friend could be extremely beneficial, so he instantly rose up in the air without wasting time.

At that moment, outside of Lin Feng's house, golden holy Qi was madly dashing to the skies. People raised their heads to look at the cultivator who was unleashing that strength, but they couldn't even open their eyes because it was too bright.

"An emperor, a strong cultivator from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness?" thought the crowd. That person was going to attack the deployment spell head-on because Zhou Tian Mu and the others were stuck inside.

Many people rushed over wanting to watch. That deployment spell caster was extremely arrogant and despised people from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, but what could he do against an emperor?

"Who dared attack my people!" yelled the emperor. He hadn't arrived yet, but he was already releasing Qi and shouting furiously.

After a few more minutes, he finally arrived in the sky above Lin Feng's house.

“He's here!”

“Illusion deployment spell?” the emperor glanced around. He jumped forwards and released terrifying golden lights which surrounded the deployment spell.

The cosmic energies from which the deployment spell was composed slowly faded. Mui's deployment spell wasn't that strong after all, just about any emperor could destroy it if they tried.

Mui was furious when he saw that.

“Don't worry Master Mui, I can handle them.” said Lin Feng smiling indifferently. Mui looked pensive, but then he smiled and nodded. He was wondering why those people were angry with Lin Feng. He knew Lin Feng didn't like them, but that was why he had put on a mask and had chosen a new identity. He couldn't figure out what Lin Feng's goal was.

Mui recalled his Qi and walked to his room. He wanted to see how Lin Feng was going to deal with an emperor.

The ground continued to quake as the illusion deployment spell was slowly falling apart. Finally, it broke, letting the clouds roll in waves and releasing those who were stuck inside.

Zhou Tian Mu and the others glanced around, realizing that they were actually very close to Lin Feng.

“Kill him! Crush him!” said Zhou Tian Mu furiously. His leg was still bleeding, and his face was deathly pale.

The strong cultivator in the sky looked down at Lin Feng in a cold way.

“You dared attack people from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness?” asked the emperor when he saw that Zhou Tian

Mu's leg had been cut off. Even though Zhou Tian Mu was weak, he was a direct descendant of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness. Hurting him was equal to humiliating the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness.

“Boom boom!” A terrifying strength fell from the sky. The emperor's eyes were filled with murder.

Lin Feng glanced at him and then he glanced at the people next to him, noting that they were getting ready to attack. Lin Feng suddenly descended from the sky, then lights flashed, and dazzling marks appeared underneath that emperor and the others. Those marks contained destructive demon and fire energies. Horrible shrieks ensued as those people instantly started burning to ashes.

“Did I ask you to leave?” Lin Feng glanced at Zhou Tian Mu who was running away.

“Your Excellency, your deployment spell is extremely powerful!” shouted someone at that moment. Lin Feng turned around and saw Jin Chen Jun. After seeing him, Lin Feng secretly smiled in his head.

Lin Feng also noticed that some emperors were coming to watch.

The emperor from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness looked furious. Lin Feng had attacked him and his people!

Zhou Tian Mu and the others were enveloped by the deadly deployment spell, and Lin Feng could kill them at anytime. Therefore, the emperor couldn't immediately attack Lin Feng.

“Brother Zhou, you're an emperor, so you can't fight younger people, especially a strong deployment spell caster such as this!” said Jin Chen Jun. He looked at Lin Feng and inspected his strength. Lin Feng had broken through to the eighth Zun Qi layer, so he had to carve his holy marks using abstruse energies. He would be even more terrifying after breaking through to the Huang Qi layer!

“This has nothing to do with you, so just mind your own business!” said the emperor from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness. Jin Chen Jun was getting involved and the emperor from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness knew why. Even so, he wanted to kill Lin Feng. If Lin Feng hadn’t killed people from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, he could have solved the issue peacefully, but now it was too late.

Jin Chen Jun’s eyes glimmered as he looked at Lin Feng and asked, “Your Excellency, would you like to join the Celestial Qi Castle?”

The emperor from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness was furious after he heard Jin Chen Jun. If Lin Feng joined the Celestial Qi Castle, then Jin Chen Jun would protect him!

“Bzzz!” Suddenly, he flew forwards while enveloping Zhou Tian Mu and the others in golden lights.

Zhou Tian Mu and the others didn’t understand what was going on, so they rose up in the air. After they made it one-thousand meters high in the sky, they finally stopped.

“Kill him!” shouted Zhou Tian Mu.

“Of course we will!” said the emperor from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness.

“Your Excellency!” said Jin Chen Jun to Lin Feng. “I won’t let the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness kill anybody from Celestial Qi Castle!”

What Jin Chen Jun was implying was that if Lin Feng accepted to join the Celestial Qi Castle, then he wouldn’t let anyone kill him.

“I’m sorry.” said Lin Feng smiling, leaving Jin Chen Jun both surprised and disappointed.

The crowd around was surprised too. Lin Feng had only broken through to the eighth Zun Qi layer and he was facing an emperor from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness. Yet, he refused

the protection from Celestial Qi Castle.

“Jin Chen, he doesn’t care about you.” said the emperor from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness smiling in a cold way. Then, he released golden holy Qi which surrounded Lin Feng and said, “You must have wanted to bring about your own destruction!”

“Die!” the emperor released force which was multiplied by a thousand and attacked Lin Feng. At the same time, he continued releasing golden holy Qi which turned into a sharp light. He could easily kill a Zun cultivator with that sharp cosmic energies.

Lin Feng shook his hand and threw his talisman in front of him. The golden holy Qi crashed onto it, causing an explosion to sound in the air.

“Deployment spell pattern!” the crowd figured out what was going on. The marks became more distinct as destructive demon-fire energies dashed to the skies. Lin Feng seemed to be bathing in them.

“Oh no.” the emperor from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness looked concerned. He could feel just how destructive that demon-fire was.

He released more golden holy Qi to create an armor around his body. However, that demon-fire could seemingly break anything. The armor hadn’t fully formed before Lin Feng’s attack reached it. The armor fell apart and Lin Feng’s strength penetrated his body.

“Shattering deployment spells are powerful, but because I can only use abstruse energies to carve the marks, I can’t really do much.” thought Lin Feng.

“No...” the emperor shouted furiously. Even though demon-fire was powerful, it couldn’t kill him at his level. However, the destructive deployment spell was still hurting him.

At the same time, Lin Feng grabbed his talisman with both hands

and rushed over to him...

# Chapter 1591: Unstable Situation

---

Lin Feng stretched out his hand and threw his talisman in the direction of the emperor from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness.

That emperor spat out golden holy Qi at the talisman. He was pushing back the talisman's power, but then he realized that he was surrounded by talismans on all sides. He released even more golden holy Qi in a wave around him, causing some of the talismans to break.

However, these talismans didn't release demon-fire like the first, instead an illusion appeared and trapped the emperor inside.

"Break!" shouted the emperor furiously. This time he used sharp sword lights to break the illusion deployment spell and the talismans inside.

"Be careful!" shouted Zhou Tian Mu and Di Xiu, both of whom were already far away.

"Activate!" said Lin Feng, releasing more demon and fire strength, not giving the emperor even a second break.

"How cruel!" thought the crowd. Lin Feng had directly thrown 20-30 talismans at the emperor. Each talisman could kill a cultivator at the top of the Zun Qi layer. Talismans were not like deployment spells in that they break after they release their strength. To anyone besides Lin Feng, using all those talismans was a complete waste.

"Ah..." a horrible shriek sounded. That shriek came from the emperor. Even though he had a powerful physical body, it was difficult for him to resist that demon-fire.

The illusion finally broke apart, allowing the crowd to see the emperor again. But it was worse than they could have imagined as he was consumed in demon-flames. His legs were gone, and he was

looking desperate.

He shook his hands, wanting to release cosmic energies but he realized he couldn't.

"I should make my spirit leave my physical body, at least that way it won't be as bad as dying. Fuck!" thought the emperor. His body gradually turned into nothingness as a terrifying cosmic strength dashed to the skies. Then he died, and his cosmic energies dispersed.

"What a scary person! It's no wonder he refused my invitation." thought Jin Chen Jun. He was even more enthusiastic after seeing that sick-looking young man's strength. He had killed an emperor only using deployment spells, even though he had only broken through to the eighth Zun Qi layer!

Di Xiu, Zhou Tian Mu, and the other members from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness looked crushed. Their emperor was dead!

"Escape!" Zhou Tian Mu suddenly started running away. Lin Feng narrowed his eyes and smiled evilly, "Did I say you could leave?"

Zhou Tian Mu was petrified, but he still stopped. Lin Feng could kill him whether he ran or not.

Zhou Tian Mu looked just like Zhou Tian Xiao and Zhou Tian Ruo, he was also a direct descendant of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness. He had enough influence to make an emperor come. Considering all of this, he was probably Zhou Tian Ruo's little brother.

Of course, Lin Feng wasn't going to kill Zhou Tian Mu because he was just a nobody. Even Zhou Tian Ruo was a nobody in Lin Feng's eyes, and Lin Feng didn't feel like wasting time with nobodies. Lin Feng only wanted to kill Zhou Tian Xiao, the one who had made fun of him and said that he didn't deserve being called a cultivator.



Lin Feng suddenly slapped the air in Zhou Tian Mu's direction, causing blood to splash out of his mouth as he flew away. Since Zhou Tian Xiao liked being aggressive to prove how strong he was, Lin Feng could do the same to his people.

“Piss off!” said Lin Feng in a disdainful way. Zhou Tian Mu was crawling on the ground now, meaning he had to raise his head to look at Lin Feng. He felt humiliated. Surprisingly, Lin Feng despised him and humiliated him, and yet he looked calm. Lin Feng was telling Zhou Tian Mu: you are nothing to me! The only difference was that Lin Feng didn't feel like wasting his saliva to tell him that! Instead, he just said, piss off!

While Zhou Tian Mu was engrossed in his humiliation. Lin Feng landed before the other members from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness.

Jin Chen Jun walked up to Lin Feng and smiled, “I'm Jin Chen from the Celestial Qi Castle, what's your name?”

Lin Feng glanced at him and frowned, “Are you used to being arrogant because of your social position?”

Jin Chen Jun frowned. Although he felt embarrassed, he continued smiling while saying, “Please tell me your name!”

“Mu En.” replied Lin Feng, “If you have nothing else to say, you can leave.”

How arrogant! Even though Mu En's deployment spells were powerful, Jin Chen Jun was an emperor after all!

However, Jin Chen Jun didn't show his emotions. He continued smiling and said, “I see, I won't bother you any longer then.” Then he waved his hand and left.

The other groups of influence left after they saw how Lin Feng had replied to Jin Chen Jun. Only a few people stayed, allowing the atmosphere to become calm once more.

Muyi felt how powerful those deployment spells were, he was

surprised by Lin Feng's abilities! Lin Feng had killed an emperor with his shattering deployment spell, and that was only one of the three thousand great deployment spells. If Lin Feng managed to get ahold of all three-thousand deployment spells, he'd be even more terrifying, he could become another Everlasting Emperor.

Lin Feng continued practicing and making new talismans.

News about Mu En spread within the nine great celestial castles, even the emperors were talking about him.

People were starting to gather outside Lin Feng's house. They wanted to see the guy from the rumors, was he real?

Lin Feng was in the illusion deployment spell, so he didn't care that much about what was going on outside. Mui was not so happy to have so many guests.

"What is your purpose for coming here? There are too many people watching us." said Mui smiling.

"I don't care. They can just watch. I like the occasional excitement, without them I'd get bored." said Lin Feng smiling in a deep and meaningful way. Mui shook his head, he didn't understand Lin Feng at all.

"Some more people are coming, shouldn't we activate the illusion?" asked Mui.

Lin Feng gazed into the distance and saw them, they were from the Palace of Medicinal Kings.

"Palace of Medicinal Kings!" Lin Feng smiled evilly. Since they were handing themselves over, why not have some fun?

Once they arrived, all their young men were fixedly staring at Lin Feng. They looked at the illusion deployment spell and then they waved at Mui and Lin Feng, but only talked to Lin Feng, "We're from the Palace of Medicinal Kings. We came to see you because you're an amazing deployment spell caster!"

Lin Feng didn't even glance at them when they were talking. He suddenly stood up and said coldly, "Who told you to stand in the sky ABOVE me?"

"Your Excellency!" that person wanted to explain, but Lin Feng shouted furiously, "Get the fuck down!"

"Alright." said the young men. They had come to make friends with Lin Feng, but the illusion deployment spell disappeared just as they arrived. This led to the awkward encounter.

Everybody landed on the ground, but then Lin Feng suddenly jumped up as marks appeared beneath him. He was absorbing their destructive energies, readying to release them at anytime. The young men from the Palace of Medicinal Kings became pale and said, "Your Excellency..."

"You dare invade the place where I am staying, you must kneel!" shouted Lin Feng furiously. These guys were getting more upset and confused, invaded the place where he stayed? What was going on?

## Chapter 1592: The Fox Borrows the Tiger's Fierceness By Staying With Him

---

The young men from the Palace of Medicinal Kings hadn't thought that things would go down that way. If they had come to Lin Feng's sect or clan, they would have been polite, but they were in a random courtyard, so they didn't need to be polite. They should be able to come and greet him with ease.

Lin Feng looked furious. He took a step forwards and the destructive energies became more intense. The young men from the Palace of Medicinal Kings sucked up their pride, knelt down, and clenched their fists. He was humiliating them, but why?

"Piss off now! And if you ever do that again, I'll kill you!" said Lin Feng. They stood up and the leader of the group bowed before Lin Feng, "We didn't mean to disturb you. Your Excellency, I'll remember this next time."

Then they left. Lin Feng had humiliated them, and they probably wouldn't forgive him for it.

That guy was a great deployment spell caster who could even kill emperors, which allowed him to have such a bad temper. If he had done what they did to him, coming without notice and looking down upon them, then the cultivators from the Palace of Medicinal Kings would have gotten angry too.

Of course, they couldn't know that Lin Feng had lost his temper because the Palace of Medicinal Kings had humiliated his teacher back when he was trying to save him. Lin Feng had warned them, someday, he'd avenge his teacher and he'd crush them in their own territory. Things were just getting warmed up.

This news all spread around. The deployment spell caster was becoming famous! Other young men from the nine great celestial castles didn't dare seek him out anymore, not after what happened

to the young men from the Palace of Medicinal Kings.

Qi Yun Xiao was facing a group of people in Celestial Qi Castle.

“Jin Chen Jun, what you mean to say is that we should remain calm?” asked Qi Yun Xiao.

“Master, I went and talked to him, but he’s a strange guy and he’s not easy going. He considers everybody and everything beneath his notice, no matter where they’re from. A few days ago, he humiliated a group of people from the Palace of Medicinal Kings. He also offended the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness.” Jin Chen Jun explained.

Qi Yun Xiao and the other members from the Celestial Qi Castle thought highly of Mu En. Even though he was only a cultivator of the Zun Qi layer, he could kill emperors using deployment spells. After breaking through to the Huang Qi layer, he’d become a priceless asset.

Qi Yun Xiao calmly listened as Jin Chen Jun continued, “Master, that guy is a cultivator of the Zun Qi layer and he can already kill emperors, on top of that, he despises everybody from the nine great celestial castles. All of this tells me he’s not a simple deployment spell caster. Where did he learn his deployment spells? Who transmitted them to him? He can’t possibly have learnt them on his own.”

“You’re right. I also thought about that. I believe that there must be a powerful cultivator supporting him. We can just wait and see how things play out. He offended the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, he even killed one of their emperors. They won’t let him off.”

“Emperor Dong, Emperor Qi, you two go and observe what happens. The Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness will definitely do something, and we need you two to watch.” said Qi Yun Xiao. Even though they were both direct descendants of the Qi Clan, Qi Yun Xiao didn’t even know their names, he didn’t even

know if they were younger or older than him. He just knew that people who were sent to the small world were weak. People who used fate seeds to break through to the Huang Qi layer had limited abilities.

“Roger!” said Emperor Dong. Emperor Dong and Emperor Qi knew where they stood in the great world. Many people had a higher status than them in Celestial Qi Castle, even some of the younger people.

---

Sometime later, a terrifying Qi surrounded Lin Feng’s house again.

Outside the illusion, there were twenty people wearing golden robes.

“Destroy the illusion deployment spell.” said one of them. In a flash, an emperor released energies to attack the illusion.

“Break!” shouted that emperor. Lights condensed and turned into a beam which moved towards the illusion.

“How audacious!” shouted a loud voice, making the crowd shiver. A terrifying strength emerged from inside the golden lights. Then the golden lights suddenly broke apart and a gigantic hand descended from the sky, moving towards the emperor.

The emperor’s facial expression changed. His golden holy Qi turned into a sharp sword, however, the gigantic hand still managed to grab him. The mist started surrounding him before he disappeared with the hand.

“Oh no!” The group who was attacking Lin Feng looked petrified, especially the leader who jumped forwards. He released golden holy Qi which was a lot scarier than the previous emperor’s Qi. The Earth and sky shook, and the mist gradually disappeared.

After the mist dispersed, everybody was aghast for the emperor who was dragged into the illusion was lying on the ground. Cosmic

strength was emerging from his body and rising to the skies, indicating that he was dead.

There were two people standing in front of him, one was Lin Feng and the other one was Mui. Nobody had paid attention to Mui before, but now they were!

The gigantic hand which had appeared a moment before couldn't have been Lin Feng's, which meant that it belonged to his friend: Mui.

"A medium-level emperor!" The strong cultivators from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness looked concerned.

"Your Excellency, who are you?" asked the medium-level emperor from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness in a rude way. Things were more complicated than he had expected.

"Mui from the Everlasting Palace." said Mui. Everybody was speechless, those people were from the Everlasting Palace!

The Everlasting Palace was known for being extremely powerful. They could easily destroy the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness or even Qing Di Mountain. Nobody here could afford to offend the Everlasting Palace.

Lin Feng slowly rose up in the air and smiled evilly, "You're from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness? How majestic! I'm here, so come and kill me already!"

The members from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness all pulled a long face. Kill people from the Everlasting Palace? And a very talented cultivator at that? They didn't dare.

Besides, he was probably very well positioned within the Everlasting Palace! Everything was making sense now.

# Chapter 1593: Invited by Everyone!

---

“Everlasting Palace!” the strong cultivators from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness looked defeated. Even though the Everlasting Celestial Emperor was dead, they still couldn’t offend them.

Lin Feng was so strong that when Muyi mentioned the Everlasting Palace, nobody doubted his words.

The medium-level emperor glanced at them and people started thinking a lot. Finally, they decided to give up. The medium-level emperor had taken his disciple abroad to practice, so they could only forget about it.

“Your Excellency, you must be joking.” said the medium-level emperor trying to smile. “I wouldn’t have thought that you were from the Everlasting Palace! This was just a misunderstanding. I represent the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, I’m very sorry, Your Excellency.”

Lin Feng still looked at them in a cold way. Lin Feng also had many thoughts running in his mind. That was the advantage of being part of a very powerful group, he could benefit from a reputation without having to do much.

“If I managed to make Tiantai raise in the great world, then nobody would dare attack Tiantai’s people again, just like Qing Di Mountain. Then, Tiantai could become a holy place.” thought Lin Feng. The medium-level emperor from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness looked at Lin Feng and said, “Zhou Tian Mu!”

Zhou Tian Mu shivered. Since Muyi had mentioned the Everlasting Palace, Zhou Tian Mu knew things weren’t going to be simple. He had tried to steal fur from a cultivator from the Everlasting Palace.

“You’re a useless bastard!” said the emperor as he violently



slapped Zhou Tian Mu, making him fly away. He felt humiliated, and even worse, now he would never be able to get his revenge.

“Your Excellency, we need to provide our disciples with a better education, please don’t blame us.” said the medium-level emperor while smiling at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng smiled and said indifferently, “The Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness are not my enemies, however, one of your disciple wanted to steal my stuff, so I taught him a lesson. Then, he wanted to kill me, but luckily, my deployment spells are not that bad. Now Uncle Muyi protected me, otherwise, you would have killed me already.”

The medium-level emperor from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness looked embarrassed and said, “If you want to punish Zhou Tian Mu, our unworthy son, please do as you wish.”

“It’s easy to blame Zhou Tian Mu for everything, but a moment ago, you also wanted to kill me. The cultivation world follows the law of the jungle, where the weak are prey of the strong. I can understand you want to blame others, but if Uncle Muyi hadn’t protected me, I’d be dead already and you would have killed people from the Everlasting Palace. Therefore, if I meet anyone from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness that I can kill, I will not hesitate.”

“How arrogant.” thought the crowd. Lin Feng really had a bad temper. The Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness was polite to him in the end and he yet, he still continued acting aggressive. He’d kill their people if he encountered them? How cruel and audacious.

The strong cultivator of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness was furious, that person was way too arrogant. He didn’t give them face at all.

“Your Excellency, why do you need to act like that?” asked the strong cultivator coldly.

“Piss off!” said Lin Feng. The emperor rolled up his sleeves and said, “We already apologized, but if you don’t care, then we can’t do anything. We’re off.”

Then, he turned around and left. He was a medium-level emperor, but Lin Feng had told him to piss off. Did Lin Feng want him to kneel down and beg or what?

“Let’s go.” said Lin Feng while smiling at Muiyi.

They activated the illusion deployment spell again, but Muiyi still didn’t understand what was going on, “Did you have problems with the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness in the past?”

“I did, but it’s not related to life and death.” said Lin Feng, sitting on a wooden chair and looking at the sky. He was smiling in a deep and meaningful way, “Master Muiyi, deactivate the illusion spell, soon, some important people are going to come and see us.”

“What are you scheming?” said Muiyi shaking his head. He stood up and got ready to deactivate the illusion deployment spell.

“We’re studying deployment spells, but we also need materials. If someone could help us, wouldn’t it be even better?” said Lin Feng enigmatically. Muiyi deactivated the deployment spell and then, just like Lin Feng had said, someone came a short time after.

“Qi Yun Xiao from the Celestial Qi Castle, I’ve heard about an amazing cultivator and here you are. I came to greet you.” Lin Feng smiled but remained seated on his chair. Then he whispered, “The Celestial Qi Castle is quick to act. Now that they’ve lost control over the small world, they really want to find other ways to have power.”

“Come.” said Lin Feng calmly. There were many people from Celestial Qi Castle waiting for them outside.

Emperor Dong, Emperor Qi, they were all there. Qi Qian Xing was there too.

Of course, Lin Feng had changed a lot. Back then, Qi Qian Xing

had banished him, which wasn't something he'd forgive.

“What do you want from me?” asked Lin Feng.

“I've heard an amazing cultivator was here, so I came. We wanted to invite you to come over to Celestial Qi Castle.” said Qi Yun Xiao politely.

“The Celestial Qi Castle isn't the only group in here.” said someone else. “We're from the Celestial Palace of Punishing Thunders, we also wanted to invite you.”

“Celestial Wen Castle, we wanted to invite you.”

Outside, more and more people appeared. As expected, these people were all interested in getting to know cultivators from the Everlasting Palace.

## Chapter 1594: Modest Gift

---

Even though the courtyard wasn't that small, it was already packed with people from all the nine great celestial castles, except the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness and the Palace of Medicinal Kings. Lin Feng had underestimated himself, he hadn't thought that so many people would be interested in a deployment spell caster from the Everlasting Palace.

Those people from the nine great celestial castles all hoped they could become friends with Lin Feng, and thus become friends with the Everlasting Palace. There was one strong cultivator from Celestial Qi Castle who studied deployment spells and had joined the Everlasting Palace. In Celestial Qi Castle, he was strong, but in the Everlasting Palace, he was rather weak. Therefore, his position was too low for them to work with. Lin Feng was different though, with the strength of the Zun Qi layer, he had managed to kill an emperor, and a medium-level emperor was protecting him. After breaking through to the Huang Qi layer, he'd become someone important without a doubt.

"Thank you everybody for inviting me, but now I am facing a dilemma. I don't know where I should go." said Lin Feng.

"We invited you first, so if you want to come to our Celestial Qi Castle, we'll organize something great for you." said Qi Yun Xiao politely.

"Our Celestial Palace of Punishing Thunders arrived at almost the same time. Master, we have some thunder deployment spells which we could exchange for your views on deployment cultivation." said the strong cultivator from the Celestial Palace of Punishing Thunders in a polite way. What he meant by "exchanging views on cultivation" was "we're going to offer you a thunder deployment spell if you come".

The others were not happy, but they still tried to convince Lin

Feng. Lin Feng smiled thinly and said, “Everybody, you’re so nice to me. I really don’t know what to do. I wish I could come but I am so busy here and I want to fabricate some talismans. The problem is I need some materials, so if everybody could...”

Lin Feng was smiling in a deep and meaningful way.

Muyi also smiled. Lin Feng was too sly!

“We have materials, you should come to our palace and we’ll gift you some.”

“No, no...” Lin Feng couldn’t miss all other opportunities because of a single group. He smiled and said, “Ah no, no, that’s not what I meant. I’m going to find some materials and then after that I’ll decide where I’m going.”

“How could we let you find your own materials. We’re going to pick some up in our palace and we’ll bring them back to you.” said a strong cultivator from the Celestial Palace of Punishing Thunders, though he was already gone.

“I’m going to pick some up for you too then!” Everybody started leaving, they were afraid to act too slowly.

Muyi couldn’t hold it anymore, he burst into laughter. Shaking his head while whispering, “Those people are trying to be friends with you and they’re trying so hard! I don’t even know if there are any tensions between you and them.”

Lin Feng smiled and said nothing. He was very pleased with how things were moving.

Those people were fast. What Lin Feng didn’t know was that something had happened in the buffer zone just a moment before. The seven groups of influence had fought each other in the marketplace over materials which were useful for deployment spell casters.

Lin Feng took some rings while remaining indifferent, but on the inside, he was overjoyed. He didn’t need to worry about talismans

for a long time now!

“Master!” said the last one, it was someone from Celestial Qi Castle. They were the last ones to make it back.

Qi Yun Xiao walked to Lin Feng and said, “Master, here are some modest presents we gathered for you. You shouldn’t have a problem creating talismans with them. Have a look.”

“Eh?” When Lin Feng saw how confident Qi Yun Xiao looked, he got even more excited! Had Qi Yun Xiao prepared priceless presents for him?

Lin Feng inspected the ring with his godly awareness.

“Cosmic energy movements!” Lin Feng was amazed. He raised his head and looked at Qi Yun Xiao.

“What’s this?” asked Lin Feng to Qi Yun Xiao. Qi Yun Xiao obviously knew what Lin Feng was referring to.

“Master, it absorbs cosmic energy and processes cosmic energy automatically. You can use the cosmic energy from that ring to carve deployment marks.” said Qi Yun Xiao who was smiling confidently. He could use cosmic energy to create talismans?

“You are so kind to me, even though I’m just a little boy. It would be impolite of me to decline.” said Lin Feng giggling. How could he refuse such a great gift?

When Qi Yun Xiao heard Lin Feng call himself a little boy, he smiled triumphantly. The Everlasting Palace would be friends with Celestial Qi Castle in the future now that he had offered him such a great gift.

The others looked furious. They wouldn’t have thought that Qi Yun Xiao would find such a great gift.

“It’s only a small gift. If you like it, I’m very happy. Alright, I shouldn’t disturb you but I think it’d be a pity if you didn’t come to the Celestial Qi Castle. You should come over sometime and we’ll

have drinks and food prepared. We have even more materials for you to fabricate talismans with.

Qi Yun Xiao really wanted to become friends with Lin Feng, so he invited him again.

“Hehe.” Lin Feng smiled and said to everybody, “Everybody is so nice to me, so I can’t refuse your invitations. First I’ll go to Celestial Qi Castle for a few days and after that, if anyone is willing to invite me, I’ll happily come.”

Qi Yun Xiao looked very happy after he heard Lin Feng. He didn’t intend to let Lin Feng go after he came though.

“Master, let’s go to the headquarters of Celestial Qi Castle altogether.”

“Alright.” said Qi Yun Xiao, “Master, please.”

“Master Mu En, you can come to Celestial Wen Castle whenever you want.” said a strong cultivator from the Celestial Wen Castle, smiling at Lin Feng politely. Even if Lin Feng had accepted Celestial Qi Castle’s invitation first, there are still other opportunities.

Lin Feng and Muyi walked through the territories of Celestial Qi Castle, noting how many interesting places for cultivation there were.

“Master, this is Jia Yun Peak, and that wooden bridge leads to the Yao Yun Peak. Where would you prefer to go?” asked Qi Yun Xiao. They were in the depths of Celestial Qi Castle’s territories.

“I like Yao Yun Peak, but you don’t need to stay with me all the time.” said Lin Feng smiling.

“Alright, there’s a quiet pavilion there. I’ll send some beautiful women to you, and if you like them, you can do whatever you want with them.” said Qi Yun Xiao smiling.

“You’re too polite!” said Lin Feng. There were many pavilions

there and the landscapes were magnificent. Now, Lin Feng was Celestial Qi Castle's guest of honor!



# Chapter 1595: Invite a Wolf Into One's House

---

There was a pavilion on Yao Yun Peak, and the surroundings were very beautiful. Looking over the mountain's side there was a sea of clouds, providing a tranquil feeling. Besides this, Lin Feng was offered several women's services, but he declined them once they got there.

Lin Feng took out the ring with the cosmic energy and the fur, then he put them on a stone table as Muyi observed. Lin Feng didn't need to try so hard to make talismans anymore, he just had to put some materials on a table and things happened almost naturally, and with the cosmic energies it was even easier to carve the marks.

"They offered you a wonderful gift just to be friends with you!" said Muyi smiling. If Lin Feng had really been a member of the Everlasting Palace, it would have undoubtedly benefited Celestial Qi Castle. Even now Muyi didn't understand what Lin Feng's end goal was.

"Indeed, I can make many talismans easily with that." said Lin Feng smiling. He didn't need to rely on his own abstruse energies to carve marks, but if he could use both types of energies then his talismans would be even more powerful.

"Master Muyi, I need calm for a few days to fabricate some talismans. If the people from Celestial Qi Castle come here to invite us for dinner or whatever, just refuse and tell them I'm practicing cultivation." said Lin Feng to Muyi. He had too many materials, so now he needed to fabricate talismans!

"I will." said Muyi, smiling and nodding. He didn't study talismans, so he went to continue studying illusion deployment spells in the mountains.

Lin Feng went to another place in the mountains to study. During the next few days, many people from Celestial Qi Castle came to

invite them for dinner, amongst other things. But since Lin Feng was practicing cultivation, they didn't want to disturb him. Instead, they left more materials to fabricate talismans with Muyi and told him to give them to Lin Feng. They were very polite during that time. One month later, Lin Feng finished fabricating some talismans and came out of his room again.

Celestial Qi Castle sent beautiful women every day, and each of them brought more items. On that day, the beautiful girls were only watching Lin Feng and Muyi in the pavilion. After some time passed, Jin Chen Jun came to Yao Yun Peak and invited Lin Feng and Muyi. This time, they didn't refuse.

“Master Mu En, Master Qi Yun Xiao has some things to do. When he saw that you were practicing cultivation, he left for a few days, but he should be coming back soon.” Jin Chen Jun and Lin Feng were walking on the wooden bridge as Jin Chen Jun was talking. The landscape was magnificent, they could see the entire territory of Celestial Qi Castle from there!

“Jin Chen Jun, you're too polite. Such an insignificant person as myself doesn't deserve Master Qi Yun Xiao's kindness. I can't even repay you, Jin Chen Jun, for your kindness.” said Lin Feng. Jin Chen Jun was very happy when he heard Lin Feng. Of course, Lin Feng was sleeping and eating in their territory and they gave him presents all the time, so they could only be friends at this juncture. They were just worried about getting Lin Feng to come in the first place, and now that he was there, everything would proceed smoothly.

“Master Mu En, all I ask is that you don't consider me a stranger. If you need anything more, just tell me and I'll do it for you.” said Jin Chen Jun.

“Celestial Qi Castle is so kind to me. I feel honored.” said Lin Feng. He then pointed at Celestial Qi Castle's vast territory and said, “Jin Chen Jun, I practice shattering deployment spells. Even though Celestial Qi Castle doesn't practice such things because you

have an endless number of extremely strong cultivators, I could cast one on your territory as a protection. This could be a sign of gratitude.” said Lin Feng.

Jin Chen Jun was extremely happy, “You’re so kind, we can’t refuse. We will do everything we can to help you, I guarantee you!” Since Lin Feng wanted to help them with a deployment spell, Jin Chen Jun felt like preparing even more gifts for him that he’d give him after, then their friendship would become even more stable.

“I don’t like procrastinating, so I will start today. I just need to use the cosmic energies from fate seeds to cast the powerful deployment spell.” said Lin Feng.

Alright, what kind of fate seed do you need?” asked Jin Chen Jun. He was a little bitter on the inside though, fate seeds could be used to break through to the Huang Qi layer and now Lin Feng wanted to use one to try out his deployment spell.

“An Earth fate seed.” said Lin Feng. He saw that Jin Chen Jun’s mouth twitched, but he still smiled and said, “Prepare a few, after all, Celestial Qi Castle’s territory is gigantic, so if you need a powerful shattering deployment spell, we’ll need several fate seeds.”

“No problem. I will do all I can. Offer me a moment as I ask someone to get some.” Jin Chen Jun then turned around and spoke to Emperor Dong, “Emperor Dong, brother, you have a high cultivation level, so you’re faster than I am. Can you go back to Celestial Qi Castle and pick those up? Thank you.”

Even though Jin Chen Jun was an emperor, he didn’t have that many fate seeds. From those few, he didn’t have any Earth fate seeds. Even if he did have some, he wouldn’t be willing to use his own.

“Alright.” Emperor Dong nodded and smiled at Lin Feng, “Master, I’m going to Celestial Qi Castle to get your fate seeds.”

“Thank you, Master.” said Lin Feng, smiling in a resplendent way. If Emperor Dong knew he was facing Lin Feng right now, how would he react?

“I’ll be back later.” said Emperor Dong politely.

Lin Feng smiled and said, “That Emperor Dong is really nice, even though he’s strong, he’s still so polite.”

Emperor Qi and Qi Qian Xing were upset after they heard that. Emperor Dong wasn’t willing to act that way with just anyone. Let alone he was only an emperor in the small world, of which their social position within the hierarchy of the group was so low, they had no choice but act polite in these situations.

“Emperor Dong is nice, indeed. Those two are Emperor Qi and Qi Qian Xing, Emperor Qi has broken through to the Huang Qi layer for a very long time now and Qi Qian Xing is about to break through to the Huang Qi layer.” said Jin Chen Jun, introducing the two to Lin Feng. They looked at Lin Feng and said politely, “Master Mu En, you must think we’re ridiculous!”

“Your cultivation levels are higher than mine. I’m the one who feels ridiculous.” said Lin Feng smiling. Even though he was acting pleasant in front of all these people, on the inside, he wasn’t happy. He hoped he’d kill them soon and avenge all the people they had killed.

However, at that moment, they were chatting and laughing. Jin Chen Jun was extremely happy now that Lin Feng and he were becoming good friends, and now Emperor Qi and Qi Qian Xing were becoming friends with Lin Feng as well.

“Jin Chen Jun, Emperor Dong is gone now, so let’s have a walk.” suggested Lin Feng. Jin Chen Jun nodded, why not?

“Let’s go.” said Lin Feng. He immediately rose up in the air.

“There are many people here, even in Si Xiang City, we don’t have such places. But our market is a little bit better.” said Lin

Feng.

“Of course, but you can’t compare Si Xiang City with such a small place.” said Jin Chen Jun. They both flew very far away. As they were flying, they came across a castle which looked like Celestial Qi Castle, both majestic and imposing.

“What a beautiful building! Let’s go and look at it!” said Lin Feng smiling.

“Master Mu En, wait!” said Jin Chen Jun, his facial expression suddenly changed. Lin Feng turned around and asked, “Is there a problem?”

Jin Chen Jun got nervous after he saw Lin Feng was frowning. He didn’t want to lose his new friend, so he smiled again and said, “Master Mu En, that’s the Palace of Medicinal Kings.”

“The Palace of Medicinal Kings is one of the nine great celestial castles, no wonder it’s so beautiful. I really want to go and see it.” said Lin Feng smiling. Jin Chen Jun didn’t know what to say anymore. What did Mu En want to do there? He couldn’t prevent Mu En from going, he could just warn him.

Jin Chen Jun couldn’t know that Lin Feng wanted to cause trouble. As he passed through, Lin Feng wanted to see if their people were going to attack him!

# Chapter 1596: Causing Trouble

---

Lin Feng entered the Palace of Medicinal Kings while Jin Chen Jun looked petrified as he followed. The Palace of Medicinal Kings probably wouldn't dare attack a deployment spell caster from the Everlasting Palace, so they should be fine.

They both flew in the sky above the Palace of Medicinal Kings, causing people to look up at them in a despising way. Someone dared enter their palace without warning them beforehand? Even members from the other groups of influence didn't do that, but now a stranger dared?

"Stop!" Even though the strangers looked strong, they had to stop them.

Lin Feng looked at them and shouted, "Piss off!"

The guards were even more surprised, that person was so aggressive!

"It's the Palace of Medicinal Kings, stop!" shouted his interlocutor.

Lin Feng smiled coldly and continued flying forwards, ignoring those people as he moved along.

Then, someone punched the air in Lin Feng's direction. Lin Feng didn't even try to dodge, as if it had nothing to do with him.

"Who dared attack!" a gigantic golden hand blocked the attack.

How could Jin Chen Jun let anyone injure Lin Feng? He didn't dare be too aggressive either, they were in the Palace of Medicinal Kings after all and he was from Celestial Qi Castle. If he injured or killed someone, it could trigger a war between their groups.

"Jin Chen Jun!" The young man looked furious when they recognized Jin Chen Jun. "Does Celestial Qi Castle want to attack our Palace of Medicinal Kings?"

“You’re so noisy! If you dare stop me again, Jin Chen Jun will kill you without hesitating!” Lin Feng rudely said.

How could they know that Jin Chen Jun wasn’t happy to be there, but he had to follow Lin Feng. Jin Chen Jun knew that Lin Feng had previously made people from the Palace of Medicinal Kings kneel in front of him as he insulted him. Was this revenge?

“That herbal garden is nice, let’s go take a look at it.” said Lin Feng. As they were flying about, more and more people came towards Lin Feng and Jin Chen Jun.

Lin Feng acted as if he hadn’t noticed anything. Rather, he was looking at the herbal garden, commending it on its great smell. He smiled and said, “I wouldn’t have thought that there would be so many incredible herbal plants here, many of them are priceless even! I’m taking them all.”

Jin Chen Jun’s mouth was wide open, speechless. The ground shook as Lin Feng landed on the ground and released Earth abstruse energies to cover the entire herbal garden.

“Moron!” thought Jin Chen Jun. They were done for! Lin Feng didn’t seem to care still as he started picking up all the plants and flowers.

“Stop that you moron!” shouted someone furiously. A silhouette was flying at them looking furious, his eyes were bloodshot even. He had spent hundreds of years on that garden and now some strangers were stealing from it?

“It took me hundreds of years to grow those plants and flowers, some of them need a thousand years to blossom and they’re at 998 years. It’ll only be two more years before they...” the old man was furious. He wanted to kill Lin Feng no matter what now.

“You moron, you must die!” said the old man raising his hand and releasing force.

“Your Excellency, please control yourself!” Jin Chen Jun’s facial

expression suddenly changed. He was furious, especially seeing how Mui didn't seem like he intended to attack at all.

"Jin Chen Jun, good, very good!" said the old man furiously. By now the garden was completely empty, Lin Feng had taken everything.

"How audacious! You tried to kill me!" said Lin Feng. Others from the Palace of Medicinal Kings started surrounding Lin Feng with murderous intentions.

"Emperor Qi, make them stop!" shouted Jin Chen Jun. Emperor Qi released force around those cultivators of the Zun Qi layer, forcing everyone to freeze.

"You wanted to kill me!" Lin Feng jumped forwards and threw a few talismans.

"Deployment talismans!" those people from the Palace of Medicinal Kings suddenly looked terrified. It was him!

They couldn't know that the renowned deployment spell caster was the guest of honor in Celestial Qi Castle right now.

"Let us go!" shouted the few young men to Emperor Qi. However, Lin Feng's talismans quickly approached them and broke apart. Terrifying shattering energies surrounded those four people and killed them.

"Your Excellency, please stop!" an emperor approached from the distance. They were inside the the Palace of Medicinal King's territory, but not in their headquarters. Therefore, there weren't so many strong cultivators there, only a few low-level emperors, just like Celestial Qi Castle's territories.

"Uncle Mui, let's kill them. They wanted to kill me, so they can't blame me!" said Lin Feng moving like the wind. He landed on a tower and glanced around as he released fire energies.

The emperor who had just arrived was speechless, Mui was preventing them from doing anything as Lin Feng wreaked havoc,



setting everything on fire. He also picked up plants and flowers when he found private gardens.

After a short time, many places were burning.

An emperor happened to walk out of a building and saw the fire. He was immediately furious as he screamed, “Who dares set the Palace of Medicinal Kings on fire?”

Lin Feng glanced around and saw powerful Qi approaching from the distance. He moved like the wind and flew back to Jin Chen Jun.

“Those people are incredibly violent. Jin Chen Jun, you should have told me, or I wouldn’t have come here.” said Lin Feng indifferently.

Lin Feng had come, stolen plants and flowers, and now he had set their territory on fire. One emperor had even been killed by Jin Chen Jun, another one couldn’t move because Emperor Qi was holding him down with pressure.

Jin Chen Jun was speechless, what had he done to deserve that? He had warned Lin Feng that it was the Palace of Medicinal Kings, but Lin Feng still wanted to go.

“Jin Chen from Celestial Qi Castle, good, good. The Palace of Medicinal Kings will remember this.” said the emperor in a cold way. After he saw that a medium-level emperor was there, he didn’t act rashly, especially given Lin Feng’s social status.

Jin Chen Jun was beyond furious, he wanted to say that it had nothing to do with Celestial Qi Castle, but he couldn’t in front of Lin Feng.

“Uncle Mui, Jin Chen Jun, let’s go back. Jin Chen Jun, next time don’t forget to remind me that I can’t come here.” said Lin Feng. Jin Chen Jun’s heart twitched, but they did leave. The crowd from the Palace of Medicinal Kings didn’t chase them, even though they wanted nothing more than to do so.

“Celestial Qi Castle!” screamed a cold voice.

# Chapter 1597: Revenge

---

News spread that Celestial Qi Castle had been to the Palace of Medicinal Kings and had caused a lot of trouble. It was even said that some people had been injured and killed. It was also rumored that they stole precious plants and flowers from their private gardens.

The Palace of Medicinal Kings started sending a lot of strong cultivators to the buffer zone and Celestial Qi Castle did the same. After Qi Yun Xiao learnt about that, he immediately volunteered himself to a patrol with some other strong cultivators.

The white-bearded old emperor from the Palace of Medicinal Kings was seated as he glanced around and said indifferently, "Everybody has now heard about Celestial Qi Castle's assault. They humiliated us, so what should we do?"

"Master, the situation is a bit strange." said an emperor at that moment. "From what I know, the leader of the group was Jin Chen Jun, and he was with some emperors, but there were no high officials. The Palace of Medicinal Kings and Celestial Qi Castle has never had problems before, plus Jin Chen Jun has no reason to provoke us. Even if he did, he wouldn't be brave enough to try like that."

"You're right. The only explanation would be that people behind the scenes, people who control Celestial Qi Castle, are using Jin Chen Jun. If it's not the case, then it could be Mu En trying to cause problems."

"Everything is possible. Mu En is from the Everlasting Palace and controls powerful deployment spells. Last time, he humiliated our disciples, and now he came to our palace, attacked our people, and stole our herbs. All in all, even if he did it, he was supported by Celestial Qi Castle. He doesn't fear us, he actually despises us." reasoned that person.

Everyone in the meeting nodded. They weren't stupid and could reason that too. If the people who controlled Celestial Qi Castle behind the scenes hadn't started that, then Jin Chen Jun couldn't possibly do it on his own, so the only one who could have started that was Mu En.

Bang! The white-bearded emperor hammered the table with his fist. Then he yelled, "Mu En is insane but whether it's Celestial Qi Castle or Mu En's fault, I don't care, Celestial Qi Castle is responsible for this!"

Everybody nodded.

"Inspect Celestial Qi Castle in secret and inform us of anything you find. In three days, we'll pay a visit to Celestial Qi Castle." said the white-bearded old man. They wouldn't forget Mu En's role in all of this!

At the same time, back in Celestial Qi Castle, there were many strong cultivators gathered in a hall, including Qi Yun Xiao who was seated in front of everyone with a sullen face. He was now paying for those events. Celestial Qi Castle had gone to the Palace of Medicinal Kings and had killed people, humiliating them. There was zero chance that the Palace of Medicinal Kings would forgive them.

Jin Chen Jun perfectly knew that he would have to bear the responsibility for those things. They had made great efforts to bring Mu En to their castle, so could they blame him? They didn't even dare talk about their troubles near Mu En, otherwise, he might get upset and leave.

"Go and spend time with Master Mu En!" said Qi Yun Xiao coldly. Things were done already, and they couldn't go back in time to fix them. Blaming Jin Chen Jun was useless too. The best thing to do now was to continue building their relationship with Mu En.

Lin Feng didn't care about all those things. He was with Muyi in the vast spaces of Celestial Qi Castle. He was carving marks all

around Celestial Qi Castle while Muyi was helping him by releasing cosmic energies into the marks.

The marks were intertwining and turning into holy marks. Immediately after, they disappeared as they sank into the wall.

To cast a great deployment spell over the entire territory of Celestial Qi Castle, Lin Feng had to cast countless small deployment spells first. He wasn't as experienced as Yan Di so he wasn't as fast and precise, but he was always improving.

Jin Chen Jun was in the distance, calmly observing him. He didn't want to disturb him now.

“Even though Lin Feng caused them a lot of trouble, he was very serious when it came to casting deployment spells. He even looks like a completely different person.” thought Jin Chen Jun.

Qi Yun Xiao and some others approached Jin Chen Jun. Jin Chen Jun was going to talk but Qi Yun Xiao raised his hand while observed Lin Feng, “I’ve heard that when casting deployment spells, you cannot make a single mistake whilst drawing the marks, otherwise it will influence the overall efficiency of the spell. Besides, when you cast a great deployment spell, you need to cast countless small deployment spells. Those people’s strength relies in their concentration. They’re usually very good at practicing cultivation too. It is because of this that there are some groups which date back to the antiquity who specialize in deployment spell casting. You could almost claim that those people are enlightened.”

Everybody listened to Qi Yun Xiao and then looked at Lin Feng with admiration. He was so young and he was already so good at casting deployment spells. A bright future awaited him.

“Observe him and try to learn from him.” said Qi Yun Xiao to the crowd. Everybody nodded in return.

Lin Feng continued carving marks for three days without

stopping. The crowd around him just observed, entranced by his focused and meticulous carvings. Master Mu En was exactly the kind of person Qi Yun Xiao had described. He didn't let anything distract him, he didn't even raise his head to look around.

Muyi was secretly amazed as well. Lin Feng had been carving marks for three days and three nights, so he couldn't wait to see the final product. Muyi thought even more now that he was far from being as talented as Lin Feng.

Finally, Lin Feng carved the last mark in the central-most part of Celestial Qi Castle. Around him, all the invisible marks were intertwining.

"Done!" Lin Feng put his hands on the marks and suddenly, they started shining magnificently. In a short time, the whole Qi Clan was shining.

"Break!" A gigantic word appeared in the sky: BREAK. Jin Chen Jun was amazed by that strength!

"I wonder how strong that deployment spell is." whispered Jin Chen Jun. Three days, three nights of effort...

"You were right Master Qi Yun Xiao, even if Master Mu En wasn't a deployment spell caster, he'd be an incredible cultivator." said Emperor Dong sighing. Many emperors were gathered there, preparing for an assault. They had offended the Palace of Medicinal Kings, so it was only a matter of time until they got their revenge.

"Mission successfully completed. The deployment spell is an overwhelming success." Lin Feng landed before Jin Chen Jun and the others and smiled.

"Master Mu En, you've made great efforts on our behalf. Thank you." said Jin Chen Jun smiling. Lin Feng's deployment spell would surely be terrifying.

If Mu En became an emperor in the future, and then became one

of the leaders of the Everlasting Palace while Celestial Qi Castle had him as a friend, then they wouldn't need to care about the Palace of Medicinal Kings or Qing Di Mountain ever again.

“You did so much for me, so this can't be considered much. It is my duty to make Celestial Qi Castle happy.” said Lin Feng smiling in a resplendent way. Celestial Qi Castle had done so much for him?

An emperor from Celestial Qi Castle frowned as he gazed into the distance.

Lin Feng turned around as well and saw people flying above the clouds. He smiled evilly. Finally, perfect timing!

# Chapter 1598: The Explosive Power of the Shattering Deployment Spell

---

“People from the Palace of Medicinal Kings are here.” Everyone in Celestial Qi Castle raised their heads, shivering with fear. The Palace of Medicinal Kings was going to attack them!

“What are you doing here, dear friends?” asked Qi Yun Xiao to the crowd in the distance. This time, the Palace of Medicinal King’s people didn’t look happy. But no matter what, they had to remain polite at first.

“Qi Yun Xiao, you should know what’s going on! Why even ask?” asked the leader of the group from the Palace of Medicinal Kings. It was the white-bearded old emperor. He shook his hands and millions of vines appeared, which then became as sharp as swords and immediately surrounded all the buildings in Celestial Qi Castle.

In a flash, buildings started collapsing, reduced to rubble. The people who were inside those buildings started panicking and running away. The Palace of Medicinal Kings hadn’t dispatched too many people, but they were all strong emperors.

The white-bearded emperor wasn’t the only one who attacked, the others started attacking too, destroying countless buildings.

“Let’s fight!” Qi Yun Xiao wanted to say something more, but he glanced around and saw countless members of Celestial Qi Castle bleeding and flying around.

Qi Yun Xiao jumped forwards and lights dashed to the skies, he was aiming for the white-bearded emperor. The other emperors from Celestial Qi Castle started attacking too.

Lin Feng was standing in the sky, watching the battle comfortably. Everything was happening the way he had expected. Of course, things weren’t over, it was only the beginning. Even



though they were already having a great battle, it wasn't enough for Lin Feng. He hoped the battles would rise to the next level.

Even though Lin Feng didn't join the battle, nobody tried to kill him. After all, he was a great deployment spell caster from the Everlasting Palace. Attacking him might enrage all the Everlasting Palace's people, which would result in uncountable consequences.

"Celestial Qi Castle's people use different sorts of cosmic energies, while the strong cultivators from the Palace of Medicinal Kings use precious items and can activate the soul of herbs and plants. How interesting." thought Lin Feng. He saw a strong cultivator from the Palace of Medicinal Kings whose spirit was a white plant which diffused white lights around his fellow fighters, healing them.

"Master Yun Xiao, if you need me to intervene, then just ask. Celestial Qi Castle has been so kind to me, so I will do my best to kick them out if need be." said Lin Feng to Qi Yun Xiao. He didn't want to attack on his own, for if Qi Yun Xiao told him to attack, that way, they would bear the responsibility for the aftermath.

"I'll tell you if we need you, Master." said Qi Yun Xiao as he attacked another cultivator. His hand turned into a golden light, piercing through the sky.

Lin Feng had watched Emperors fight before, but this was much more impressive because these emperors were stronger and had even more terrifying spirits, godly awareness strength, cosmic energies, and holy marks. All those emperors had different powers, different battling styles, and different attacks.

"No..." finally, an emperor from Celestial Qi Castle died, cosmic energies corroded his body before he disappeared with a horrible shriek.

"Palace of Medicinal Kings, good, very good!" said Qi Yun Xiao. "Please, Master Mu En, help!"

Some of their emperors were dying now and Qi Yun Xiao couldn't do much to save them.

“Alright.” Lin Feng smiled and jumped to the center of the area, yelling at all the emperors from Celestial Qi Castle, “Everybody, get next to me.”

“Move!” shouted Qi Yun Xiao loudly. Instantly, all the emperors flew over to Lin Feng. Lin Feng nodded at Muyi and Muyi suddenly jumped forwards, saving some emperors who couldn't make it fast enough.

As they ran over, the cultivators from the Palace of Medicinal Kings chased them. It seemed that Mu En wanted to activate a deployment spell, so they had to do something.

“Stay around and kick them if they get too close.” said Lin Feng indifferently. He raised his hands and suddenly, terrifying marks started shining. With a flash, the entire territory of Celestial Qi Castle glowed, destructive energies emerging.

“Let's go! Rise up in the air and defend yourselves!” a moment before, the white-bearded emperor didn't care too much because Lin Feng didn't pose a threat to them, however, now he could sense that the Qi was enough to make him suffocate.

“Die!” shouted Lin Feng. With that, the Earth and sky started shaking violently as cosmic energies condensed. A light beam emerged from the center of the deployment spell... Had that deployment spell really been cast by a cultivator of the Zun Qi layer?

“Ah...” a horrible shriek sounded. A strong cultivator from the Palace of Medicinal Kings was transpierced by the beam of light, immediately exploding.

Even Muyi was shaking, that deployment spell really was one of the three thousand great deployment spells of the emperor, but how could Lin Feng cast such a spell? Muyi had stayed with Lin

Feng for a while, so he knew him well, but he still couldn't believe it his eyes.

Lin Feng clenched his fists after he witnessed his success. He had carved those marks with his own two hand, and someday, he'd carve such marks with only his mind!

# Chapter 1599: Apologize

---

Lin Feng had underestimated the power of his deployment spell. With the help of fate seeds, his deployment spell was even more terrifying than he'd imagined.

Qi Yun Xiao glanced at Lin Feng. He was amazed and thought, "We must do anything we can for that guy, he'll become monstrously strong someday, as strong, if not stronger than the emperor of the Great Imperial Everlasting Palace."

Lin Feng usually seemed like he considered everybody and everything beneath his notice, but when he was carving marks, he turned into a completely different person. Besides, Qi Yun Xiao thought that it was normal for such an incredible person to be so proud and arrogant. Even if he didn't understand Mu En that well, he had to do his best to solidify their relationship.

Qi Yun Xiao walked to Lin Feng carefree-like as he wasn't worried about the people from the Palace of Medicinal Kings anymore. He whispered, "Master Mu En, your deployment spell is absolutely fantastic. If you have the opportunity, maybe you should try and find the Everlasting Celestial Emperor."

Lin Feng turned around and smiled at Qi Yun Xiao, "He is a god to me. If I could do only ten percent of what he can do, I'd be happy."

"You are too modest, Master Mu En." said Qi Yun Xiao. He knew that Lin Feng was just being modest because he was usually very confident, proud and arrogant. Even if Mu En thought that, Qi Yun Xiao felt that he could become as strong as the Everlasting Celestial Emperor someday.

"Master Yun Xiao, I'm so sorry, I think that some people from Celestial Qi Castle died already. I'm also sorry about the buildings which were destroyed." Lin Feng said to Qi Yun Xiao. Qi Yun Xiao shook his head and said, "This is just one of our territories. The

people who are from here are not that important, and we can reconstruct buildings whenever we have time.”

Actually, Qi Yun Xiao was sad to lose those people and buildings, but he didn't dare tell Lin Feng that. The deployment spell was too important for the Qi Clan.

“That's fine then.” said Lin Feng nodding and smiling. Strong cultivators not caring about weaker people was normal in that world. People from the Celestial Qi Castle had died but they weren't important, just like the people whom they sent to the small worlds. They were only toys for them to play with.

The shattering deployment spell gradually disappeared and the marks became less dazzling.

The crowd took a deep breath.

Buildings were destroyed and there were ruins everywhere.

Even medium-level emperors weren't that scary.

People raised their heads and saw three people, three emperors: the white-bearded emperor was the leader of that group.

“Only three people are left?” that meant six-seven emperors had fallen.

“Deployment spell.” The crowd glanced around and saw the ruins everywhere. Then they looked at Lin Feng, the deployment spell caster.

The white-bearded shivered after he looked at the aftermath. That deployment spell posed a serious threat to them. If they hadn't moved fast enough, they would have died too!

“Pfew...” the white-bearded man took a deep breath. Then he looked at Lin Feng and said, “Master Mu En, nobody can deny that you are an incredible cultivator. We don't want to be your enemies anymore. Let's forget about this. Concerning you and the Celestial Qi Castle, let's forget about this for today, but we'll settle the score

in the future.”

“Let’s go.” said the white-bearded emperor. The two others glanced at Celestial Qi Castle in a cold way and then left. Qi Yun Xiao and the others didn’t chase them.

“Mu En killed their emperors, but the Palace of Medicinal Kings still wants to make Celestial Qi Castle bear responsibility for what happened.” thought the crowd.

Lin Feng smiled, everything was running perfectly! The Palace of Medicinal Kings and Celestial Qi Castle were now enemies.

“Master Mu En, thank you so much for helping us today. Don’t worry about us, you can go back to Yao Yun Peak and have a rest.” said Qi Yun Xiao politely. Lin Feng nodded and smiled, “Alright, I’m going then.”

“Jin Chen Jun, Emperor Dong, protect Yao Yun Peak and be there if Master Mu En needs anything.” said Qi Yun Xiao. Jin Chen Jun and Emperor Dong understood just how important Mu En was to Celestial Qi Castle, “Roger, Master!” Then, they left with Lin Feng.

Qi Yun Xiao was standing there, looking at where the marks had disappeared.

“Master, should we...” asked someone next to Qi Yun Xiao. Suddenly, Qi Yun Xiao looked at him in a cold way and said, “Never mention that again!”

Qi Yun Xiao knew what that person meant. He wanted to try Lin Feng’s deployment spell, but he was afraid that Lin Feng could get angry if they did. If Lin Feng told them they could try and use the deployment spell, then they’d do it, otherwise they would remain respectful.

Since Lin Feng had cast such a terrifying deployment spell, he could cast a second one, and a third one...

News spread quickly, now everybody knew about what had

happened at Celestial Qi Castle. Mu En, a cultivator of the eighth Zun Qi layer killed so many emperors with his deployment spell.

Sometime after that battle, in a luxuriant hall in the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, a medium-level emperor was seated before a crowd, “What do you think?”

Some people frowned, but one of the emperors said, “Mu En’s deployment spells are terrifying, he might even have an exceptional status within the Everlasting Palace. Perhaps he’s a core disciple and he’s only traveling to gain experience right now.”

“Indeed.” the leader nodded, stood up and took two steps. Then he gazed into the distance and said, “There are tensions between the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness and Mu En. Everybody besides us and the Palace of Medicinal Kings invited him. Then, Celestial Qi Castle went to the Palace of Medicinal Kings to cause trouble... I’m worried that Mu En started that.”

“You mean that Mu En hates us and the Palace of Medicinal Kings so much that he wants to get his revenge?” asked one of them worriedly.

“I’m also worried about that. I think Mu En hates us even more than the Palace of Medicinal Kings. If so, he could pose a threat to us.” said a strong cultivator in a golden robe, frowning.

“Master, what should we do?” asked someone.

That cultivator remained silent for a few minutes before looking at someone, “Tian Xiao, gather some presents and apologize to him.”

“Apologize?” the crowd was surprised. The Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness was going to apologize to a cultivator of the Zun Qi layer?

# Chapter 1600: Kneel Down To Talk

---

Inside a vast forest in the Qing Di Mountain, two people were playing chess.

“Brother Qi, you play chess as if you were casting deployment spells, you leave no room for criticism. I feel inferior!” said someone in a gentle way, smiling.

“Brother Ni Chen, you must be joking. This is nothing.” said the other one called Brother Qi, shaking his head and smiling.

“If you say the Everlasting Palace’s deployment spells aren’t powerful, then I, Ni Chen, don’t know what powerful means.” said Emperor Ni Chen smiling. “I’ve heard about a young man who’s an adept at casting deployment spells. With the strength of the eighth Zun Qi layer, he alone killed seven emperors. Even some medium-level emperors fear him. Do you know who he is and why he came to the nine great celestial castles?

“Eighth Zun Qi layer, he killed seven emperors, medium-level emperors fear him?” Qi Yun Lei frowned and said, “Really?”

“Of course, it happened just yesterday. News spreads quickly around here.” said Ni Chen nodding.

“It’s impossible to cast such explosive deployment spells using abstruse energies.” said Qi Yun Lei shaking his head, even though he knew that Emperor Ni Chen wouldn’t lie to him.

“He may have used fate seeds.” said Emperor Ni Chen.

“Even with cosmic energies, he would still need to cast a great deployment spells to defeat so many emperors.” whispered Qi Yun Lei. Even in the Everlasting Palace, there weren’t that many great deployment spells, so usually young cultivators didn’t have the opportunity to study them, apart from core disciples. Besides, there were only two young men in the Everlasting Palace who, with the strength of the Zun Qi layer, could pose a threat to



medium-level emperors. However, they weren't supposed to be there.

“Brother Ni Chen, do you know his name? Do you know where he is from?” asked Qi Yun Lei to Emperor Ni Chen.

“Apparently, that deployment spell caster's name is Mu En and he's staying in Celestial Qi Castle's territory these days.” said Emperor Ni Chen, smiling at Qi Yun Lei. Qi Yun Lei was surprised, inside Celestial Qi Castle?

“Mu En, Mu En...” whispered Qi Yun Lei. Even though he wasn't very high in the hierarchy of the Everlasting Palace, he knew the names of the most outstanding young people. There couldn't be a such monstrously strong young man whom he hadn't heard of before, and yet he hadn't heard of Mu En before.

“Brother Ni Chen, I'm going to Celestial Qi Castle to see him in person. I wouldn't have thought that something this interesting would happen.” said Qi Yun Lei smiling. He looked embarrassed for he had never heard of such a strong disciple from the Everlasting Palace. He feared that Emperor Ni Chen would despise him for his lacking knowledge.

“Oh?” when Emperor Ni Chen saw Qi Yun Lei's face, he smiled and nodded, “Alright, you haven't been to Celestial Qi Castle in a long time. But Brother Qi, you just got back, so you should have a rest. You can go tomorrow instead. Besides, I will also dispatch some people to go with you. If it's possible, we'll invite him to to the Qing Di Mountain too.”

“Sounds like a plan. Thank you.” said Qing Di Mountain nodding. He wasn't in a rush. He belonged to the direct lineage of Celestial Qi Castle and he was very talented. That was why he had become a cultivator in Qing Di Mountain, and then, because his deployment spells were quite good, he had also been accepted by the Everlasting Palace.

Qing Di Mountain didn't prevent their cultivators from joining

other groups, after all, if people were talented, it was only normal for them to constantly seek better places to practice cultivation. If Qing Di Mountain had prevented them from leaving, it might hurt them in the long run. Besides, it was also a good way to gain new allies, for example, Qi Yun Lei was a member of Celestial Qi Castle and had joined Qing Di Mountain and the Everlasting Palace.

.....

Buildings and towers in Celestial Qi Castle, which had been destroyed just the other day, had already been reconstructed.

Outside of their territory, some people appeared who were wearing golden robes and had golden lights flashing around them.

“We are from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, and we came here to greet Celestial Qi Castle.” said Zhou Tian Xiao loudly.

A short time after, Jin Chen Jun appeared and smiled, “Brother Zhou, why did you come here?”

“We came to say hello to Master Mu En, we hope you can tell him that we came by.” said Zhou Tian Xiao smiling politely.

Jin Chen Jun’s understood what they wanted. There were tensions between the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness and Mu En, so they came to resolve that.

Since they were saying they wanted to greet him, Jin Chen Jun didn’t prevent them from going to see him. Otherwise, if Mu En learnt about that, he might get upset.

Jin Chen Jun took them to Yao Yun Peak, and after a short time, they arrived near the bridge.

“Wait here, I’m going to inform the Master.” said Jin Chen Jun to Zhou Tian Xiao and the others. Zhou Tian Xiao nodded and smiled, “Thank you, Jin Chen Jun.”

Lin Feng was seated on a stone and his eyes were closed, so Jin

Chen Jun stopped a certain distance away and shouted in a low voice, “Master Mu En!”

He didn’t want to disturb Lin Feng, however, Lin Feng opened his eyes and smiled at Jin Chen Jun, “What do you want, Jin Chen Jun?”

“Master Mu En, Zhou Tian Xiao from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness is here with some people. They came to greet you, so I was wondering whether you wanted to see them or not.” explained Jin Chen Jun.

“Zhou Tian Xiao?” Lin Feng looked interested and smiled indifferently. Zhou Tian Xiao despised Lin Feng, he had even told him he didn’t deserve to be called a cultivator and now he had come to make attends.

“Tell them to come, Jin Chen Jun.” said Lin Feng smiling. Jin Chen Jun nodded and a short time after, Zhou Tian Xiao and the others arrived.

It was the first time Zhou Tian Xiao saw Lin Feng with that mask. As expected, the deployment spell caster’s face was a bit yellow, making him look sick. He had broken through to the eighth Zun Qi layer and he looked normal, but in the end, he was an overwhelmingly powerful deployment spell caster.

“Zhou Tian Xiao from the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness, we came to greet you, Master Mu En.” said Zhou Tian Xiao extremely politely. Even though he didn’t enjoy saying that, the elders of his group had told him to do that and he couldn’t refuse.

“What do you want?” asked Lin Feng calmly.

“Some unpleasant things happened between the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness and you, and it’s our fault. We hope you can forgive us. I came to apologize in the name of the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness.”

Zhou Tian Xiao walked to Lin Feng and gave him a ring.

Lin Feng took the ring, then Zhou Tian Xiao moved backwards. Lin Feng inspected the ring, after inspecting it, he smiled indifferently.

“The Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness tried to kill me a few times, and if I didn’t have some tricks, I would have died to you already. So now, do you think saying you’re sorry is enough?” said Lin Feng impolitely while putting the ring away.

“What do you want the Great Celestial Palace of Thoughtfulness to do, Master Mu En? Tell us what you want, and we’ll do it for you.” said Zhou Tian Xiao as politely as before.

“Kneel when you talk to me and show respect.” said Lin Feng, slowly standing up and looking down at them. Zhou Tian Xiao quacked with anger, kneel?

# Table of Contents

## [Peerless Martial God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1501: Destroy](#)

[Chapter 1502: Ferocious, Fierce, Tough](#)

[Chapter 1503: The Holy City's Disciples](#)

[Chapter 1504: To The Qi Clan!](#)

[Chapter 1505: Tiantai's Terrifying Army](#)

[Chapter 1506: Explosive Attacks](#)

[Chapter 1507: Can't Withstand a Single Attack!](#)

[Chapter 1508: Magnificent Collisions](#)

[Chapter 1509: The Qi Clan's Situation](#)

[Chapter 1510: Violence](#)

[Chapter 1511: The Emperors' Intervention](#)

[Chapter 1512: The Limits of the World](#)

[Chapter 1513: Two Emperors' Fall](#)

[Chapter 1514: A Mysterious Assassin on the Road](#)

[Chapter 1515: Lin Feng's Strange Experience](#)

[Chapter 1516: Violating Rules](#)

[Chapter 1517: Emperor Dong's Revenge](#)

[Chapter 1518: Dead End](#)

[Chapter 1519: Emperor Wu Tian Jian](#)

[Chapter 1520: Chessboard](#)

[Chapter 1521: The Only Option](#)

[Chapter 1522: Punishing Thunder Heart Sutra](#)

[Chapter 1523: Arrogant Zhou Tian Xiao](#)

[Chapter 1524: Emperor Wu Tian Jian's Intervention](#)

[Chapter 1525: The First Battle in the Great World](#)

[Chapter 1526: Mu Chen](#)

[Chapter 1527: Escape](#)

[Chapter 1528: Conditions](#)

[Chapter 1529: For Life](#)

[Chapter 1530: Dialogue](#)

[Chapter 1531: Small World's People](#)

[Chapter 1532: Celestial Castles](#)

[Chapter 1533: Celestial Qi Castle](#)

[Chapter 1534: Qing Di Mountain](#)  
[Chapter 1535: Bronze Plate](#)  
[Chapter 1536: Exposed!](#)  
[Chapter 1537](#)  
[Chapter 1538: Danger](#)  
[Chapter 1539: Control Lin Feng](#)  
[Chapter 1540: Control](#)  
[Chapter 1541: Dream Creation](#)  
[Chapter 1542: Competing](#)  
[Chapter 1543: Qing Di Mountain's Cultivators](#)  
[Chapter 1544: Emperor Shen Yu](#)  
[Chapter 1545: Insane and Arrogant](#)  
[Chapter 1546: Part of the Audience](#)  
[Chapter 1547: Rescue](#)  
[Chapter 1548: Humiliation](#)  
[Chapter 1549: On the Battle Stage](#)  
[Chapter 1550: Zhou Tian Ruo Humiliated Three Times Over](#)  
[Chapter 1551: Aggressive](#)  
[Chapter 1552: Shouting Furiously](#)  
[Chapter 1553: Give It Back!](#)  
[Chapter 1554: Refusal](#)  
[Chapter 1555: Leaving](#)  
[Chapter 1556: Yao Ye Island](#)  
[Chapter 1557: Many Changes](#)  
[Chapter 1558: Practicing Hard](#)  
[Chapter 1559: New Emperor](#)  
[Chapter 1560: The Everlasting Celestial Emperor's News](#)  
[Chapter 1561: Back in a Familiar Place](#)  
[Chapter 1562: Each Person Has Their Own Malicious Intentions](#)  
[Chapter 1563: A Trap](#)  
[Chapter 1564: Great Emperor's Palace Map](#)  
[Chapter 1564: Watch your words](#)  
[Chapter 1566: All The Everlasting Bronze Plates!](#)  
[Chapter 1567: Everlasting Celestial Emperor](#)  
[Chapter 1568: Si Xiang City](#)  
[Chapter 1569: Fighting Against the Bestial Emperor Again](#)  
[Chapter 1570: Si Xiang City](#)  
[Chapter 1571: Former Site](#)  
[Chapter 1572: The Forbidden Area of Si Xiang](#)

[Chapter 1573: Forbidden Area's Lights](#)  
[Chapter 1574: Gigantic Elephant](#)  
[Chapter 1575: Limitless](#)  
[Chapter 1576: Overly Aggressive](#)  
[Chapter 1577: Great Emperor of the Universe](#)  
[Chapter 1578: The Appearance of the Palace](#)  
[Chapter 1579: Life and Death Path](#)  
[Chapter 1580: Not Dead Yet?](#)  
[Chapter 1581: Deployment Spell](#)  
[Chapter 1582: Action](#)  
[Chapter 1583: Three Years](#)  
[Chapter 1584: The Great Emperor in Cyan Clothes](#)  
[Chapter 1585: Everlasting Transmission](#)  
[Chapter 1586: Going Back To The Great World](#)  
[Chapter 1587: Shopping](#)  
[Chapter 1588: The Power of the Deployment Talisman](#)  
[Chapter 1589: Chaos](#)  
[Chapter 1590: Shattering Deployment Spell](#)  
[Chapter 1591: Unstable Situation](#)  
[Chapter 1592: The Fox Borrows the Tiger's Fierceness By Staying With Him](#)  
[Chapter 1593: Invited by Everyone!](#)  
[Chapter 1594: Modest Gift](#)  
[Chapter 1595: Invite a Wolf Into One's House](#)  
[Chapter 1596: Causing Trouble](#)  
[Chapter 1597: Revenge](#)  
[Chapter 1598: The Explosive Power of the Shattering Deployment Spell](#)  
[Chapter 1599: Apologize](#)  
[Chapter 1600: Kneel Down To Talk](#)